

AMERICAN

PA

AR0159



TELE NA

MA/CHACAYO

MORTALIA



THE LIBRARY OF THE

PARTIAL TITLE

11 42 43 44 45 46 47 48 49 50 51 52 53 54 55 56 57 58 59

11 42 43 44 45 46 47 48 49 50 51 52 53 54 55 56 57 58 59

THE LIBRARY OF THE  
UNIVERSITY OF  
NORTH CAROLINA  
AT CHAPEL HILL



ENDOWED BY THE  
DIALECTIC AND PHILANTHROPIC  
SOCIETIES

PB1228  
.B7  
1906

Sept. 7, 1909.



a 00001 22737 2

*W. H. Jones*

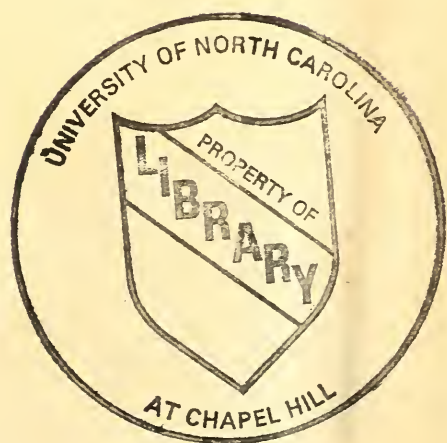
This book is due at the LOUIS R. WILSON LIBRARY on the last date stamped under "Date Due." If not on hold it may be renewed by bringing it to the library

DATE DUE	RET.	DATE DUE	RET.
<del>APR 21 1983 W</del>			
<del>APR 21 1983</del>			
<del>MAR 17 1984</del>			
MAR 19 '84			
MAY 14 1984 W		MAY 16 '84	
JUN 15 1984 S			
JUL 18 1984 W			
<del>MAY 18 1984</del>			
FEB 19 1988			
<del>FEB 19 '88</del>			
JUN 21 1990			
<del>MAY 24 1991</del>			
APR 17 2012			



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2012 with funding from  
University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill





unc  
I 61

**THE LIBRARY OF THE  
UNIVERSITY OF  
NORTH CAROLINA**



**THE  
CHESTER N. GOULD  
COLLECTION OF  
SCANDINAVIAN PHILOLOGY  
AND LITERATURE**

187  
1904  
NAIMEAN

14  
AUGUST

out TWO WEEKS  
one of

leir na  
Dháiríneach  
Eighth  
1906

Dublin: M. H. Gill & Son.

THIRD EDITION—REVISED.

CAHILL & CO., Printers, Dublin.

## PREFACE.

---

THE Grammar of Spoken Irish presents many difficulties owing to the forms peculiar to different places, but as the literary usage embraces the dialects current in different localities, save a few archaic survivals, the literary usage has been adopted as the standard of this grammar.

Modern Irish may be said to date from the end of the 16th, or the beginning of the 17th century. At the commencement of the modern period many forms are found which belong to an earlier period, and many forms which have since grown obsolete, side by side with those by which they have since been replaced. We have deemed it advisable not to introduce into this grammar any obsolete grammatical forms, how prominent soever they may be in early modern literature. However, as students preparing for public examinations are frequently required to read the works of early modern authors, we have added in the present edition an appendix containing the verb-system of early modern Irish. Such early modern grammatical forms as survive only within a small area are not given in the large type; on the other hand, those grammatical forms generally found in literature, and which are still in use in any one of the three Irish-speaking Provinces, are given in the large print in preference to those more generally used by Irish speakers, but which are not found in literary works. It is hoped that this method may help to popularise Irish literature, and to reconcile in some degree the slight discrepancies which exist between the spoken and the literary usages.

In the present Grammar the letters *l*, *n*, and *p* are reckoned among the aspirable consonants, and *p* is omitted

491.625

B874g



from the eclipsable ones. The declension of verbal nouns is transferred from the third declension to the chapter on the verbs. A collection of heteroclite nouns is inserted. The usual declension of the personal pronouns is not employed, and the terms Conjunctive and Disjunctive pronouns are adopted. The naming of the four principal parts of an Irish verb, the treatment of the Autonomous form of conjugation, the rejection of compound prepositions, infinitive mood, and present participle form a few of the features of this grammar. Among the appendices will be found lists of words belonging to the various declensions, of verbs of both conjugation, and of irregular verbal nouns.

Many of the rules have been taken from the "O'Growney Series" and from the "Gaelic Journal." The grammars of Neilson, O'Donovan, Bourke, Craig, and of many other authors, have been consulted. The chapter on the classification of the uses of the prepositions is based on Dr. Atkinson's edition of Keating's *Uí Bhoi-ḡaoite an Búir*. Some of the sentences which illustrate the rules have been culled, with the author's permission, from the *Mion-ċáimc* of the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P.

In the present edition the enunciation of the rule *Caol le caol 7 leathan le leathan* has been modified so as to bring it more into harmony with the spoken language. The sections on the Relative pronouns, Demonstrative pronouns, Adverbs, and Conjunctions have been greatly enlarged and improved. A large collection of Idiomatic expressions and an exhaustive Index have been also added.

The Christian Brothers acknowledge with pleasure their indebtedness to Mr. John McNeill, B.A., and Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for their generous and invaluable aid in the production of this grammar. To Mr. R. J. O'Mulrenin, M.A., Mr. J. H. Lloyd, to Mr. Shortall, and to many other friends their best thanks are due, and gratefully tendered.

# CONTENTS.



	Page
The Letters ... ..	1
Sounds of the Vowels ... ..	2
The Diphthongs ... ..	2
The Triphthongs ... ..	3
Consonants, Division of the ... ..	4
,, Combination of the ... ..	5
Accent ... ..	6
,, Words distinguished by ... ..	7
Obscure Sounds of the Vowels ... ..	7
Aspiration, Explanation of ... ..	9
,, How marked ... ..	10
,, Rules for ... ..	11
Eclipsis ... ..	13
,, Rules for ... ..	15
Insertion of n ... ..	16
,, τ ... ..	17
,, h ... ..	18
Attenuation and Broadening ... ..	18
caol te caol 7 teatan te teatan ... ..	19
Syncope, Explanation of ... ..	20
,, Examples of ... ..	21
The Article ... ..	23
,, Initial changes produced by ... ..	23
Gender, Rules for ... ..	26
Cases, Number of ... ..	28
,, Rules for formation of the ... ..	28

	Page.
First Declension ... ..	30
„ Examples of vowel-changes ...	33
„ Irregular Genitive Singular ...	34
„ Irregular Nominative Plural ...	34
Second Declension ... ..	36
„ Examples of vowel-changes ...	37
„ Irregular Genitive Singular ...	39
„ Irregular Nominative Plural ...	39
Third Declension ... ..	41
„ Irregular Nominative Plural ...	44
Fourth Declension ... ..	45
„ Irregular Nominative Plural ...	46
Fifth Declension ... ..	47
Heteroclite Nouns ... ..	51
Irregular Nouns ... ..	52
The Adjective ... ..	56
„ First Declension ... ..	56
„ Second Declension ... ..	59
„ Third Declension ... ..	60
„ Fourth Declension ... ..	60
„ Aspiration of ... ..	61
„ Eclipsis of ... ..	62
„ Comparison of ... ..	63
„ Irregular Comparison ... ..	68
Numeral Adjectives ... ..	69
„ „ Notes on ... ..	71
Personal Numerals ... ..	73
Possessive Adjectives ... ..	74
Demonstrative „ ... ..	78
Indefinite „ ... ..	79
Distributive „ ... ..	82
Interrogative „ ... ..	82
Intensifying Particles ... ..	66
Emphatic „ ... ..	75

Translation of "Some"	...	...	...	80
"Any"	...	...	...	81
<b>The Pronoun</b>				
Personal	...	...	...	83
Reflexive	...	...	...	84
Conjunctive and Disjunctive	...	...	...	85
Neuter Pronoun εαὐ	...	...	...	86
Prepositional	...	...	...	87
Relative	...	...	...	91
Demonstrative	...	...	...	93
Indefinite	...	...	...	94
Distributive	...	...	...	95
Interrogative	...	...	...	96
Reciprocal	...	...	...	97
<b>The Verb</b>				
Conjugations, Number of	...	...	...	98
"Three forms of	...	...	...	99
"Autonomous form of	...	...	...	100
Moods, Number of	...	...	...	102
Tenses, Number of	...	...	...	103
"Various forms of the	...	...	...	104
Principal Parts of a Verb	...	...	...	106
"Examples of	...	...	...	107
<b>First Conjugation</b>	...	...	...	108
"Notes on Moods and Tenses of	...	...	...	112
Rule for Aspiration of τ of the Past Participle	...	...	...	116
Participle of Necessity	...	...	...	116
Derivative Participles	...	...	...	117
Declension of Verbal Nouns	...	...	...	118
<b>Second Conjugation</b>	...	...	...	118
Verbs in ιῆ and υῆ	...	...	...	119
Syncope Verbs	...	...	...	120
<b>Rules for formation of Verbal Noun</b>	...	...	...	125
Irregular Verbs	...	...	...	127

	Page.
Irregular Verbs, Absolute and Dependent forms of	138
τάιμ	127
ιρ	133
βειρ	136
ταῖαιρ	137
αβαιρ	140
ζαῖ	142
φαῖ	142
θευν	145
φειρ	147
ελορ or ελουμ	150
ταρ	150
τείζ (τέρò)	152
ιῖ	154
ριζιμ	155
Defective Verbs	
αρ, οαρ, φεοαρ	156
ῥάριε, ὀ'ρόβαιρ, φευοαιμ	157
Adverbs	157
Interrogative Words	160
"Up and Down," &c.	160
"This side, that side," &c.	162
"Over "	162
North, South, East, West	163
Compound or Phrase Adverbs	164
Days of the Week	167
"Head-foremost "	167
"However "	168
The Adverb "The "	168
Prepositions	168
Conjunctions	169
Use of ná and ná ζο	170
Uses of μαρ	170
Interjections	171



	Page.
<b>Word-Building</b>	
Prefixes	173
Affixes	176
Diminutives	178
„ in in	179
„ in an	179
„ in ós	180
Derivative Nouns	181
Compound Nouns	182
Derivative Adjectives	186
Verbs derived from Nouns	190
„ „ Adjectives	191
<b>Syntax of the Article</b>	192
Article used in Irish but not in English	193
<b>Syntax of the Noun</b>	196
Apposition	197
Collective Nouns	197
Personal Numerals	198
Personal Nouns	199
<b>Syntax of the Adjective</b>	201
Adjective used Attributively	202
„ Predicatively	204
Numeral Adjectives	205
Dual Number	209
Possessive Adjectives	211
<b>Syntax of the Pronoun</b>	213
Relative Pronoun	214
Translation of the Genitive case of the English	
Relative	216
<b>Syntax of the Verb</b>	218
Uses of the Subjunctive Mood	219
Relative form of the Verb	221
<b>Verbal Noun and its Functions</b>	224
How to translate the English Infinitive	226
Definition of a Definite Noun	235

	Page.
When to use the Verb is ... ..	236
Position of Words with is ... ..	240
Translation of the English Secondary Tenses ...	241
Prepositions after Verbs ... ..	243
Translation of the word "Not" ... ..	246
How to answer a question. Yes—No ... ..	246
Syntax of the Preposition ... ..	249
Translation of the Preposition "For" ... ..	256
"                                " "Of" ... ..	260
Uses of the Preposition ... ..	262
Specimens of Parsing ... ..	284
Idioms ... ..	289
Idiomatic Phrases ... ..	305
The Autonomous form of the Irish Verb ... ..	315
Appendices	
i. List of Nouns belonging to First Declension	325
ii. List of Feminine Nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to Second Declen- sion ... ..	327
iii. List of Nouns belonging to Third Declension	329
iv. List of Nouns belonging to Fifth Declension	333
v. List of Irregular Verbal Nouns ... ..	334
vi. List of Verbs of First Conjugation ... ..	336
vii. List of Syncopated Verbs ... ..	338
viii. Termination of the Regular Verbs in present- day usage ... ..	339
ix. Verb-System of Early Modern Irish ... ..	340
Index ... ..	343

# CORRIGENDA.

Page	92	line	9	for	ρζαιρτ	read	ρζαιρτ
„	„	„	25	„	cé'ρ	„	cé'ρ
„	„	„	26	„	pé'ρ	„	pé'ρ
„	„	„	35	„	οα	„	οά
„	93	„	16	„	ní h-oí	„	ní h-o í
„	97	„	3	„	Cé αἰζε αν λεαδαρ	read	Cé αἰζε ζο τρυντ αν λεαδαρ.
„	113	„	16	„	ρ	read	ρ, λ, η, μ.
„	231	„	22	After	“preposition”	omit	αζ.



## **PART I.—ORTHOGRAPHY.**

---

### **CHAPTER I.**

#### **The Letters.**

1. The Irish alphabet contains eighteen letters, five of which are vowels, the remaining thirteen are consonants.

The vowels are  $\Delta$ , e,  $\mathfrak{t}$ , o, u; and the consonants are b, c, d, f, g, h, l, m, n, p, r, s, t.

2. The vowels are divided into two classes.

(1) The **broad** vowels :  $\Delta$ , o, u.

(2) The **slender** vowels : e,  $\mathfrak{t}$ .

The vowels may be either long or short. The long vowels are marked by means of an acute accent (') placed over the vowel, as  $m\acute{o}r$  (big) pronounced like the English word *more*; a short vowel has no accent, as *mot* (praise), pronounced like *mul* in the English word *mulberry*. Carefully distinguish between the terms "broad vowel" and "long vowel." The broad vowels ( $\Delta$ , o, u) are not always long vowels, neither are the slender vowels (e,  $\mathfrak{t}$ ) always short.

In writing Irish we must be careful to mark the accents on long vowels. See words distinguished by accent, par. 14.





## PART I.—ORTHOGRAPHY.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### The Letters.

1. The Irish alphabet contains eighteen letters, five of which are vowels, the remaining thirteen are consonants.

The vowels are *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*, *u*; and the consonants are *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *h*, *l*, *m*, *n*, *p*, *q*, *r*, *t*.

2. The vowels are divided into two classes.

(1) The **broad** vowels : *a*, *o*, *u*.

(2) The **slender** vowels : *e*, *i*.

The vowels may be either long or short. The long vowels are marked by means of an acute accent (') placed over the vowel, as *móir* (big) pronounced like the English word *more*; a short vowel has no accent, as *mot* (praise), pronounced like *mul* in the English word *mulberry*. Carefully distinguish between the terms "broad vowel" and "long vowel." The broad vowels (*a*, *o*, *u*) are not always long vowels, neither are the slender vowels (*e*, *i*) always short.

In writing Irish we must be careful to mark the accents on long vowels. See words distinguished by accent, par. 14.

### 3. Sounds of the Vowels.

The Irish vowel	is sounded like	in the words
á long	au	naught as in báro (baudh), boat
à short	o	not „ glar (gloss), green
é long	æ	Gaelic „ cé (kír-æé), clay
e short	e	let „ te (t'ye), hot
í	ee	feel „ máitín (mawil-eeen), little bag
i	i	hit „ fí (fir), men
ó	ō	note „ mó (mōr), big, large
o	ō, ũ	dōne or mūch „ doras (dhur-us), a door
ú	oo	tool „ glú (gloon), a knee
u	u	bull or put „ uir (ursu), a door-jamb

A short vowel at the end of an Irish word is *always pronounced*.

### The Digraphs.

4. The following list gives the sounds of the digraphs in Modern Irish. The first five are always long and require no accent. The others are sometimes long and sometimes short, hence the accent ought not to be omitted.\*

---

\* Since but few words, and these well-known, have eo short it is not usual to write the accent on eo long.

ia	is pronounced like ee-a as	ḡia (dyee-a), God.
ua	„	oo-a „ fuar (foo-ar), cold.
eu or éa	„	ae „ feur (faer), grass.
ae	„	ae „ laete (lae-hě), days.
ao	„	ae „ dhaer (dhaer), dear.
eó	„	yó „ ceol (k-yól), music.
iú	„	ew „ fiú (few), worthy.
ái	„	au + ĭ „ cáin (kau-ĭn), a tax.
éi	„	ae + ĭ „ léim (lyae-ĭm), a leap.
ói	„	ō + ĭ „ móin (mō-in), a bog.
úi	„	oo + ĭ „ rúil (soo-ĭl), an eye.
eá	„	aa „ cairteán (kosh-laán*), a castle.]
fo	„	ee „ fíor (feer), true.
ai }	„	tau (thaish), damp.
ea }		faer (far), a man.
ei	„	e „ eile (el-ě), other.
oi	„	ũ + i „ toil (thũ-il), a will.
io }	„	fiar (fiss), knowledge.
ui }		uirge (ish-ge), water.
eo	„	ũ „ oeoc (d'yukh), a drink.
ái (= aiōe),	„	ee „ cotái (kō-thee), coats.

### The Trigraphs.

5. There are six trigraphs in Irish. They are pronounced as follows:—

aoi	=	ee	raoi (see)=a wise man.
eoí	=	ō + ĭ	rneoitín (d'rō-il-een)=a wren.

---

\* Also pronounced kosh-laun.

eáí	=	aa + ĭ	cáirteáin (kosh-láain) = castles.
iaí*	=	eea + ĭ	iaíḡ (lee-ĭh) = a physician.
uaí†	=	oo + ĭ	fuáin (foo-ĭr) = found.
ui	=	ew + i	ciuin (kew-ĭn) = calm.

### The Consonants.

6. The consonants are usually divided into two classes.

(1) The liquids—l, m, n, r.

(2) The mutes—b, c, d, f, g, p, q, t.

The letter h is not given, for h is not usually recognised as an Irish letter. It can be used only as a sign of aspiration, or at the beginning of a word, to separate two vowel sounds.

Some grammarians divide the consonants into labials, dentals, palatals, gutturals, sibilants, &c., according to the organs employed in producing the sound.

7. Every Irish consonant has two natural † sounds, according as it is *broad* or *slender*.

An Irish consonant is broad whenever it immediately precedes or follows a broad vowel (a, o, u). An Irish consonant is slender whenever it immediately precedes or follows a slender vowel (e, i).

8. The Irish consonants, when broad, have a much

\* Pronounced like ille in the French word fille.

† It cannot be properly represented by any English sound. It is somewhat like *ouc* in the French word *ouest*.

‡ Other sounds will be treated of under the heading "Aspiration."



thicker sound than in English; e. g.  $\tau$  broad has nearly the sound of *th* in *thy*, i. e.  $d+h$ ;  $\tau$  broad has nearly the sound of *th* in *threw*, &c. When slender the Irish consonants (except  $r$ ) have somewhat the same sound as in English; but when they are followed by a slender vowel, they are pronounced somewhat like the corresponding English consonant followed immediately by a *y*, e. g. *ceot* (music) is pronounced  $k'y\bar{o}l$ ; *beo* (alive) =  $b'y\bar{o}$ .

It must not, however, be understood that there is a “*y* sound” in the Irish consonant. The peculiar sound of the Irish consonants when followed by a slender vowel is fairly well represented by the corresponding English consonant + an English “*y* sound.” In some parts of the country this “*y* sound” is not heard. The *y* is *only suggestive*, and is never heard as a distinct sound.

### Combination of the Consonants.

9. There are certain Irish consonants which, when they come together in the same word, do not coalesce, so that when they are uttered a very short obscure vowel sound is heard between them.

This generally occurs in the case of two liquids or a liquid and a mute. Thus *batb* (dumb) is pronounced *boll-ŭv*; *teanb* (a child) is *lyan-ŭv*; *doimda* (dark) is *dhur-ŭchŭ*; *maipda* (a market) is *mor-ŭgu*.

The following combinations do not coalesce: *cn*, *lb*, *ls*, *lm*, *rb*, *rb*, *rs*, *rn*, *lm*, *nb*, *nm*, *pm*, *nc*, *pc*.

10. In some combinations, *one of the consonants is silent.*

ot is pronounced like u

on „ nn

no „ nn

ln „ ll

Thus, co<sup>o</sup>ta<sup>o</sup> (sleep) is pronounced kullū.

ce<sup>u</sup>o<sup>n</sup>a (same) „ kaenū.

ḡr<sup>á</sup>n<sup>o</sup>a (ugly) „ graun-ū.

á<sup>i</sup>ne (beauty) „ aul-yě.

Notice the difference between nḡ and ḡn.

lonḡ (a ship) is pronounced lūng.

ḡnō (work) „ gūn-ō.

11. Only three of the Irish consonants, viz. the liquids *l, n, r*, may be doubled. This doubling can take place only at the end or the middle of words, but never at the beginning. The double liquids have quite distinct sounds from the single, except in Munster, where, in some positions, double liquids influence vowels. This doubling at the end of a word does not denote shortness of the preceding vowel, as in English: in fact, it is quite the opposite; e. g. *ea* in *ḡa<sup>r</sup>r* (better) is longer than *ea* in *ḡa<sup>r</sup>* (a man).

In Irish there is no double consonant like the English *x*, which = *ks*.

### Accent.

12. The only accent sign used in writing Irish is the acute accent placed over the long vowels, and over

the long sounds of those diphthongs, which may be sometimes short. This sign is not intended to mark the syllable on which the stress of the voice falls.

13. In simple words of two syllables the tonic accent is usually upon the first syllable, as *ásur* (óg-us), *and*; *úna* (oón-a), *Una*: but in derived words of two or more syllables the accented syllable varies in the different provinces.

In Munster the accent falls on the termination or second syllable; in Connaught it falls on the first syllable, or root; in Ulster the accent falls on the first syllable, as in Connaught, but the termination is unduly shortened. For instance, the word *carán*, a path, is pronounced *kos-aún* in Munster, *kós-aun* in Connaught, and *kós-än* in Ulster.

### The Obscure Vowel Sounds.

Whenever a vowel has neither a tonic nor a written accent, it has so transient and indistinct a pronunciation that it is difficult to distinguish one broad or one slender vowel from another; hence in ancient writings we find vowels substituted for each other indiscriminately: *e.g.*, the word *rlánuigche*, *saved*, is frequently spelled *rlánaigche*, *rlánoigche*, *rlánuigči*.

#### 14. Words distinguished by their accent.

áit, a place.

ait, funny, peculiar (what one likes or wishes).

ár, our; slaughter.

ar, on; says.

θάψ, death.

κάς, a case.

céαο (ceuro), a hundred.

κόμ, right.

κόρτε, a coach.

τοό, two.

πάν, a wandering.

πέαμ (peum), grass.

πόρ, yet.

ί, she, her.

τέαμ, clear, perceptible.

τόν, food, provisions.

μάτα, a bag.

μέαμ (meum), a finger.

μίν, fine.

νά, than; not (*imperative*).

ρόρ, a rose.

ράτ, a heel.

ρέαν (reun), happy.

ρίν, stretch.

ρόταρ, comfort.

ρούτ, (*gen. plural of* ρούτ)  
eye.

τέ, a person.

θαρ (*or* τορ), palm of the  
hand.

ταρ, turn.

ceaο, leave, permission

κομ, a crime.

κορτε, a jury.

τοο, to.

παν, wait, stay.

πεαμ, a man.

πορ, a prop.

ι, in.

τεαμ, the sea.

τόν, a blackbird.

μάτα, an eyebrow.

μέαμ, quick, active.

μιν, meal.

νά, *the plural article*.

ρόρ, flax-seed.

ράτ, filth, dirt.

ρέαν, old.

ρίν, that.

ρόταρ, light.

ρούτ, before (*with verbs*).

τέ, hot.

## CHAPTER II.

## Aspiration.

13. The word "aspiration" comes from the Latin verb "aspirare," to breathe; hence, when we say in Irish that a consonant is aspirated, we mean that the breath is not completely stopped in the formation of the consonant, but rather that the consonant sound is continuous.

Take, for example, the consonant *b*. To form this consonant sound the lips are pressed closely together for an instant, and the breath is forced out on separating the lips. Now, if we wish to get the sound of *b* aspirated (or *ḃ*), we must breathe the whole time whilst trying to form the sound of *b*; *i.e.* we must not close the lips entirely, and the resulting sound is like the English consonant *v*. Hence we say that the sound of *ḃ* (in some positions) is *v*.

The Irish letter *c* corresponds very much to the English *k*, and the breathed sound of *k* corresponds to the sound of *ċ* (when broad). To sound the English *k*, we press the centre of the tongue against the palate, and cut off the breath completely for an instant. In pronouncing *ċ* (when broad), all we have to do is to try to pronounce the letter *k* without *pressing* the tongue against the palate. The word *lóc*, a lake, is pronounced somewhat like *luk*; but the tongue is not to touch the palate to form the *k*. The sound of *ċ* aspirated when slender (especially when initial) is very well represented by the sound of "h" in "humane."

The Irish *g* (*ḡ*) has always the hard sound of *g* in the English word "go." In pronouncing this word we press the back of the tongue against the back of the palate. Now, to pronounce *ḡ* (and also *ḡ*) when broad, we must breathe in forming the sound of *g*, *i.e.* we must keep the tongue almost flat in the mouth.

The various sounds of the aspirated consonants are not given, as they are dealt with very fully in the second part of the "O'Growney Series." It may be well to remark, however, that the sound of *p* is like the sound of the Irish *p*, not the English *f*. The Irish *p* is sounded without the aid of the teeth.

16. Aspiration is usually marked by placing a dot over the consonant aspirated—thus, *ḃ*, *ċ*, *ȯ*. However, it is sometimes marked by an *h* after the consonant to be aspirated. This is the method usually adopted when Irish is written or printed in English characters.

17. In writing Irish only nine of the consonants, viz., *b*, *c*, *o*, *f*, *g*, *m*, *p*, *r*, and *t*, are aspirated; but in the spoken language all the consonants are aspirated.

### The Aspiration of *t*, *n*, *l*.

18. The aspiration of the three letters *t*, *n*, *l*, is not marked by any sign in writing, as is the aspiration of the other consonants (*ḃ* or *bh*); but yet they are aspirated in the spoken language. An example will best illustrate this point. The student has already learned that the word *leabhar*, a book, is pronounced *lyou-ar*. *mo*, my, aspirates an ordinary consonant, as *mo ḃó*, my cow; but it also aspirates *t*, *n*, *l*, for *mo leabhar*, my book, is pronounced *mā low-ar* (*i.e.* the sound of *y* after *l* disappears).

Δ <i>leabhar</i> , his book,	is pronounced	ā low-ar.
Δ <i>leabhar</i> , her book,	„	ā lyou-ar.
Δ <i>leabhar</i> , their book,	„	ā lyow-ar.
Δ <i>neart</i> , his strength,	„	ā narth.
Δ <i>neart</i> , her strength,	„	ā nyarth.

&c., &c.

19. When *t* broad begins a word it has a much thicker sound than in English. In sounding the English *l* the point of the tongue touches the palate just above the teeth; but to get the thick sound of the Irish *t* we must press the tongue firmly against the upper teeth (or we may protrude it between the teeth). Now, when such an *t* is aspirated it loses this thick sound, and is pronounced just as the English *l*.

20. It is not easy to show by an example the aspirated sound of *l*; however, it is aspirated in the spoken language, and a slightly softer sound is produced.



### Rules for Aspirations.

21. We give here only the principal rules. Others will be given as occasion will require.

(a). The **possessive adjectives** *mo*, *my*; *ṭo*, *thy*; and *a*, *his*, aspirate the first consonant of the following word, as *mo bō*, *my cow*; *ṭo māṭair*, *thy mother*; *a capall*, *his horse*.

(b) **The article aspirates** a noun in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, and also in the genitive masculine singular unless the noun begins with *ṭ*, *τ*, or *ρ*; *an bean*, *the woman*; *τá an feoil* *gairt*, *the meat is salt*; *mac an fíir*, *(the) son of the man*.

(c) In **compound words** the initial consonant of the second word is aspirated, except when the second word begins with *ṭ* or *τ*, and the first ends in one of the letters *ṭ*, *n*, *τ*, *l*, *ρ*. These five letters will be easily remembered, as they are the consonants of the word "*dentals*"; *fean-māṭair*, *a grandmother*; *cāṭ-báir*, *a helmet*; *teit-ṭinginn*, *a halfpenny*; but *fean-ṭuine*, *an old person*; *fean-teac*, *an old house*.

(d) The **interjection** *a*, the sign of the vocative case, causes aspiration in nouns of both genders and both numbers: *a fíir*, *O man*; *a mna*, *O women*; *a Seumair*, *O James*.

(e) **An adjective is aspirated** when it agrees with a feminine noun in the nominative or accusative sin-

gular, or with a masculine noun in the genitive singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders; also in the nominative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant: as *bó bán*, a white cow; *mac an fíú mór*, (the) son of the big man; *ó'n mnáoi máir*, from the good woman; *trí capall móra*, three big horses.

(f) When a noun is immediately followed by an indefinite\* noun in the genitive case, singular or plural, the initial of the noun in the genitive is usually subject to precisely the same rules as if it were the initial of an adjective: e. g. *uó éirce*, a hen-egg (lit. an egg of a hen); *uóe éirce*, of a hen-egg; *clóc míne*, a stone of meal; *mín éirce*, oaten meal. The letters *o* and *u* are not aspirated after *b*, *n*, *t*, *l*, *r*; and *f* is often excepted, as the change in sound is so great.

(g) The initial of a verb is aspirated—(1) in the imperfect, the simple past, and the conditional, active voice; (2) after the particles *ní*, not; *má*, if; *mar*, as; and *mut*, before; (3) after the simple relative particle, expressed or understood: *bí ré*, he was; *uó fear ní*, she stood; *ní fuim*, I am not; *ní béir ré*, he will not be; *an té buairear* or *an té a buairear*, he (or the person) who strikes; *uó buaireann*, I would strike.

---

\*i.e. One not preceded by the definite article, possessive adj., &c.  
See par. 585.

(h) The initial of the word following *bá* or *buó* (the past tense and conditional of the verb *ir*) is usually aspirated.\*

*bá* *maic* *uom*, I liked or I would like.

*b' fèarr* *teir*, he preferred or would prefer.

(i) The simple prepositions (except *as*, *ar*, *le*, *san*, *i*, and *go*) aspirate the initials of the nouns immediately following them: *rá cloic*, under a stone; *tug ré an leabhar do Seumas*, he gave the book to James.

## CHAPTER III.

### Eclipsis.

22. Eclipsis is the term used to denote the suppression of the sounds of certain Irish consonants by prefixing others produced by the same organ of speech.

There is usually a great similarity between the eclipsing letter and the letter eclipsed: thus, *p* is eclipsed by *b*; *t* is eclipsed by *d*, &c. If the student pronounce the letters *p* and *b*, *t* and *d*, he will immediately notice the similarity above referred to. Thus *b* and *d* are like *p* and *t*, except that they are pronounced with greater stress of the breath, or, more correctly, with greater vibration of the vocal chords.

\* Except in N. Connaught and Ulster, where this rule applies only to *b*, *p*, *m*, and sometimes *f*.

23. Seven\* of the consonants can be eclipsed, viz. *b, c, v, f, s, p, t*; the others cannot. Each consonant has its own eclipsing letter, and it can be eclipsed by no other. The eclipsing letter is written immediately before the eclipsed letter, and is sometimes, though not usually in recent times, separated from it by a hyphen, as *m-bárvo* or *mbárvo* (pronounced *maurdh*).

Formerly eclipsis was sometimes shown by doubling the eclipsed letter: thus, *Λ τταρβ*, their bull. Whenever a letter is eclipsed both should be retained in writing, although only one of them (the eclipsing one) is sounded.

24. It is much better not to consider the letter *r* as an eclipsable letter at all. *τ* replaces it in certain positions, but in none of those positions (dative singular excepted) in which the other letters are eclipsed. In fact, *r* is often replaced by *τ* when the previous word ends in *n*, as *an τρύτ*, the eye; *Λon τράτ*, one heel; *pean τ-Site*, old Sheelah; *burðean τρτλαḡ*, a crowd, &c. Some, however, maintain that *r* is really eclipsed in these cases, because its sound is suppressed, and that of another consonant substituted; but as the substitution of *τ* follows the rules for aspiration rather than those for eclipsis, we prefer to class *r* with the non-eclipsable letters, *l, m, n, p, r*.

---

\*Eight is the number given in other grammars. They include the letter *r*.

25.                   b is eclipsed by m.

c	„	ḡ.
o	„	n.
f	„	ḡ.
ḡ	„	n.
p	„	ḡ.
τ	„	o.

Δ mbápo (their poet) is pronounced a maurd.

Δ ḡcapatt (their horse)                   „                   a ḡōpâl.

Δp noân (our poem)                   „                   aur naun.

ı bpuı (in blood)                   „                   ă vwil.

Δ nḡıotta (their servant)                   „                   ang illü.

ı bpéın (in pain)                   „                   a baen.

Δ otatam (their land)                   „                   a dhöl-üv.

Although n is used as the eclipsing letter of ḡ, the sound of n is not heard, but the simple consonant sound nḡ; therefore it would be more correct to say that ḡ is eclipsed by nḡ.

### Rules for Eclipsis.

26. (a) The **possessive adjectives plural**—Δp, our; buı, your; and Δ, their—eclipse the initial consonant of the next word, as Δp otıḡeapına, our Lord; buı ḡcapatt, your horse; Δ mbao, their boat.

(b) The **article** eclipses the initial consonant of the noun in the genitive plural (both genders): tāmā na v-peap, (the) hands of the men.

(c) **A simple preposition followed by the article**

and a noun in the singular causes eclipsis\*: τᾱ ρῆ ἀν  
 ἀν ἑκαπᾱττ, he is on the horse; τᾱμῖς ρῆ τεῖρ ἀν  
 ὕφραμ, he came with the man.

(d) The **numeral adjectives** ρεᾱῖτ, οῖτ, ναοῖ, and  
 οἰεῖ (7, 8, 9, and 10), and their compounds, as 27,  
 28, 29, &c., cause eclipsis: ρεᾱῖτ ἠβα, seven cows;  
 οῖτ ἑκαοῖμῖς, eight sheep; ρεᾱῖτ ὕ-φῖρ ἠῖεαο, twenty-  
 seven men.

(e) The initial consonant of a **verb is eclipsed** after  
 the particles ἔα, not; ἀν, whether; εᾱ, where; ἠᾱ, whether . . . not or that . . . not; ἑο, that; μὴ, unless;  
 ὅα, if; and after the relative particle α when it is preceded by a preposition, or when it means  
 "all that" or "what." The relative preceded by a  
 preposition does not eclipse if the verb be past tense,  
 except in the case of a very few verbs, which will be  
 given later on: ἀν ὅτμῖγεανν τᾱ, do you understand?  
 ἠᾱ ὕφῖρτ ρῆ τῖνν, isn't he sick? εᾱ ὕφῖρτ ρῆ, where  
 is it? οὐβαμτ ρῆ ἑο ὅτῖοεαο ρῆ, he said that he  
 would come; ἀν ρεαμ ἄς α ὕφῖρτ ἀν τεαβαμ,† the man  
 who has the book.

### The Insertion of n.

27. (a) When a **word begins with a vowel**, the letter  
 n is usually prefixed in all those cases in which a con-

---

\* In many places they prefer to aspirate in this case.

† In colloquial Irish this sentence would be, ἀν ρεαμ α ὕ-φῖρτ ἀν  
 τεαβαμ ἄιγε, or ἀν ρεαμ ἑο ὕ-φῖρτ ἀν τεαβαμ ἄιγε.



sonant would be eclipsed : *e.g.*, áṛ n-áṛán táeteamát, our daily bread ; éuarō Oirín ṡo tíṛ nā n-ós, Oisín went to “the land of the young.”

The *n* is sometimes omitted when the previous word ends in *n* : as áṛ an áonač, or áṛ an n-áonač, at the fair.

(*b*) **Prepositions** (except *to* and *oe*) **ending in a vowel** prefix *n* to the possessive adjectives *á*, his, her, or their; and *áṛ*, our; *le n-á máčair*, with his mother; *ó n-áṛ to tíṛ*, from our country.

### The Insertion of *τ*.

28. (*a*) The **article** prefixes *τ* to a masculine noun beginning with a vowel in the nominative and accusative singular : as *an τ-áčair*, the father.

(*b*) If a **noun begins with** *ṛ* followed by a vowel, or by *l*, *n*, or *ṛ*, the *ṛ* is replaced by *τ* after the article in the nom. and acc. feminine sing. and the genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative singular of both genders, as *an τṛút*, the eye; *teač an τṛaṡairτ*, (the) house of the priest, *i.e.*; the priest's house ; *τá ṛiaσ áṡ teačτ ó'n τṛeitṡ*, they are coming from the hunt.

(*c*) This replacing of *ṛ* by *τ* occurs after the words *áon*, one ; *ṛean*, old ; and other words ending in *n*, as *áon τṛeačṡ amáin*, one hunt.



### The Insertion of *h*.

29. The following is a pretty general rule for the insertion of *h* before vowels:—

“**Particles which neither aspirate nor eclipse, and which end in a vowel**, prefix *h* to words beginning with a vowel. Such is the case with the following:—*te*, with; *Δ*, her; *σο*, to; *τοαρα*, second; *ρε*, six; *τρι*, three; *να*, the (in the nom., acc., and dative plural, also in the gen. singular feminine); *σο* before adverbs; the ordinal adjectives ending in *μαθ*, &c.”  
—*Gaelic Journal*.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### Attenuation and Broadening.

30. *Attenuation* is the process of making a broad consonant slender. This is usually done by placing an *ι* immediately *before* the broad consonant, or an *ε* *after* it. Thus if we want to make the *ρ* of *μόρ* (big), slender, we place an *ι* before the *ρ*; thus *μόιρ*. If we wish to make the *ρ* of *ραο* (the termination of the 1st person singular future) slender, we write *ρεαο*, &c.

31. *Broadening* is the process of making a slender consonant broad. This is often done by placing a *υ* immediately before the slender consonant, or an *Δ* after it; thus the verbal noun of derived verbs ending in *ιξ* is formed by adding *αθ*: before adding the *αθ* the *ξ* must be made broad; this is done by inserting

a u; míniġ, explain; míniġaò, explanation. If we want to make the r of ríò (the termination of 3rd singular future) broad, we must write raíò. Buaitríò ré, he will strike; meaitraíò ré, he will deceive.

Whenever a slender consonant is preceded by an i which forms part of a diphthong or a triphthong, the consonant is usually made broad by dropping the i. Thus to broaden the t in buait, or the n in ġoin, we drop the i and the we get buat and ġon. The verbal nouns of buait and ġoin are buataò and ġonaò.

---

## CHAPTER V.

CAOL LE CAOL AGUS LEATHAN LE LEATHAN;

or,

**Slender with slender and broad with broad.**

**32.** When a single consonant, or two consonants which easily blend together, come between two vowels, both the vowels must be slender or both must be broad.

This is a general rule of Irish phonetics. It has already been stated that a consonant is broad when beside a broad vowel, and slender when beside a slender vowel; and also that the sounds of the consonants vary according as they are broad or slender: hence if we try to pronounce a word like fearín, the r, being beside the slender vowel í, should get its slender sound; but being also beside the broad vowel a, the r should be broad. But a consonant cannot be slender and broad at the same time; hence, such spelling as fearín, málin, and éanín, does not represent the correct sounds of the words, and,

therefore, the device adopted in writing Irish is to have both the vowels slender or both broad ; e.g., píuín, máilín, éinín.

This law of phonetics is not a mere *spelling* rule. If it were, such spelling as *peapiúoin, málaoin, éanaoin*, would be correct. But no such spelling is used, because it does not represent the sounds of the words. The *ear* and not the *eye* must be the guide in the observance of the rule “caot le caot 7 leatán le leatán.”

Two consonants may come together, one naturally broad and the other naturally slender. When this happens, Irish speakers, as a general rule, give the consonants their *natural* sounds, i.e., they keep the broad consonant broad, and the slender one slender. For instance, the *m* of *com* is naturally broad, and the *l* of *lín* is naturally slender. In the word *comlín* (*fulfil*), the first syllable is always pronounced broad, although the word is usually written *comlín*. This is an instance of the abuse of the rule *caot le caot*. There are many words in which a single consonant may have a slender vowel at one side, and a broad vowel at the other ; e.g., *aréir* (*last night*), *aníor* (*up*), *aríam* (*ever*), *arír* (*again*), etc.

Although the rule *caot le caot* had been much abused in modern spelling, in deference to modern usage we have retained the ordinary spelling of the words.

## CHAPTER VI.

### Syncope.

33. Whenever, in a word of two or more syllables an unaccented vowel or digraph occurs in the last syllable between a liquid (*l, m, n, r*) and any other consonant, or between two liquids, the unaccented vowel or digraph is elided whenever the word is lengthened by a grammatical inflection beginning with a vowel. This elision of one or more unaccented

vowels from the body of an Irish word is called *syncope*; and when the vowels have been elided the word is said to be *syncopated*.

34. The only difficulty in syncope is that it often involves slight changes in the other vowels of the syncopated word, in accordance with the rule *caot te caot*,

35. The following examples will fully exemplify the method of syncopating words.

(a) *Nouns.*

The genitive singular of—

maíoin (morning)	is maíone	not maíoine
obair (work)	„ oibre	„ obaire
carraig (a rock)	„ cairrige	„ cairraige
pinginn } (a penny)	„ pingne	„ pinginne
piġinn }	„ piġne	„ piġinne
caðair (help)	„ caðra	„ caðara
caċair (a city)	„ caċraċ	„ caċaraċ
larair (a flame)	„ larraċ	„ lararaċ
olann (wool)	„ olna	„ olanna
buiréan (a company)	„ buiróne	„ buiróine
bhuigean (a palace)	„ bhuigne	„ bhuigine

(b) *Adjectives.*

The genitive singular feminine of—

բարծիք (rich)	is բարծիք	not բարծիք
բաւշեամալ (princely)	„ բաւշեամա	„ բաւշեամա
ձւայն (beautiful)	„ ձւե	„ ձւայն
ձօրին (pleasant)	„ ձօրն	„ ձօրին
ւարալ (noble)	„ ւարե	„ ւարալ

(c) *Verbs.*

Root.	Pres. Indicative.		
սօսալ	սօսալմ, I sleep,	not	սօսալմ.
բիւծալ	բիւծալմ, I walk,	„	բիւծալմ.
տնր	տնրմ, I tell,	„	տնրմ.
սօսալ	սօսալմ, I say,	„	սօսալմ.
տօսալ	տօսալմ, I speak,	„	տօսալմ.

The same contraction takes place in these and like verbs in all the finite tenses except the future and conditional (*old* forms). See par. 298.

A thorough knowledge of when and how Syncope takes place will obviate many difficulties

## PART II.—ETYMOLOGY.

---

36. There are nine parts of speech in Irish corresponding exactly to those in English.

### CHAPTER I.

#### The Article.

37. In Irish there is only one article, *an*, which corresponds to the English definite article, “the.”

There is no indefinite article, so that *capall* means either “horse” or “a horse.”

38. In all cases of the singular number the article has the form *an*, except in the genitive feminine, when it becomes *na*.

In all the cases of the plural it is *na*.

39. The article *an* had formerly an initial *r*. This *r* reappears after the following prepositions, *i*, *in*, or *ann*, in; *go*, to; *le*, with; *tré*, through. Although this *r* really belongs to the article, still it is usually written as part of the preposition; as *inr an leabhar*, in the book; *leir an bpearsa*, with the man.

### INITIAL CHANGES PRODUCED BY THE ARTICLE.

#### Singular.

40. (a) If a noun begins with an aspirable consonant (except *o*, *u*, and *r*),\* it is aspirated by the article

---

\* The letters *o*, *u*, and *r* are aspirable in the singular, but not usually by the article



**in the nominative and accusative feminine and in the genitive masculine**, as *an bó*, the cow; *an bean*, the woman; *mac an fí*, (the) son of the man; *ceann an éapail*, the horse's head (or the head of the horse).

(b) If a noun begins with *r* followed by a vowel, or by *l*, *n*, *í*, the *r* is replaced by *τ*, in the nominative and accusative feminine and genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative of both genders: *an trát*, the heel; *an trúil*, the eye; *tead an traidir*, the house of the priest; *mac an traidir*, the son of the artizan; *o'n traidir*, to the priest; *ar an trléib*, on the mountain.

Strictly speaking, it is only in the dat. fem. that the *r* is replaced by *τ*, but custom permits it in the masculine.

(c) If a noun begins with a vowel, the article prefixes *τ* to the nominative and accusative masculine, and *n* to the genitive feminine, as *an t-atair*, the father; *an t-uirge*, the water; *an t-eun*, the bird; *an t-uán*, the lamb; *báir na h-uíbe*, the top of the egg; *fuadct na h-aimpíre*, the coldness of the weather

(d) When the noun begins with an eclipsable consonant (except *o* and *τ*), the article generally eclipses when it is preceded by a preposition, as *ar an gcnoc*, on the hill; *o'n bfeair*, from the man. After the prepositions\* *ro* and *re* aspiration takes place, not

---

\* For the effects of *gan* and the article, see Syntax, par. 606 (b).



eclipsis, as *tuḡ ré an t-airgead do'n fear*, he gave the money to the man; *curo de'n fear*, some of the grass.

(e) No change is produced by the article in the singular if the noun begins with *o*, *n*, *t*, *l*, *r* (followed by a mute), or *p*. In *Munster* *o* and *t* are often eclipsed in the dative.

### Plural.

(f) If a noun begins with an eclipsable consonant the article eclipses it in the genitive plural, as *a bean na trí mbó*, O woman of (the) three cows; *Sliab na mban*, "the mountain of the women."

(g) If the noun begins with a vowel the article prefixes *n* to the genitive plural and *n* to the nom., the acc., and dative plural, as *tuac na n-ub*, the price of the eggs; *na n-aspail*, the asses; *ó na n-áitib reo*, from these places.

(h) The letter *r* is never replaced by *t* in the plural number under the influence of the article.

## CHAPTER II.

### The Noun.

#### I. GENDER.

41. There are only two genders in Irish, the masculine and the feminine.

The gender of most Irish nouns may be learned by the application of a few general rules.

## MASCULINE NOUNS.

42. (a) Names of males are masculine: as fear, a man; p̄lat̄, a prince; at̄air, a father; coileac̄, a cock.

(b) The names of occupations, offices, &c., peculiar to men, are masculine: as ollam̄, a doctor; r̄ile, a poet; báro, a bard; breiteam̄, a judge; r̄aiḡioiúir, a soldier.

(c) Personal agents ending in óir, aipe, uir̄e (or aip̄e, oir̄e), or ac̄ are masculine: as r̄geutur̄e, a story-teller; bároóir, a boatman.

(d) Diminutives ending in án, and all abstract nouns ending in ar or ear, are masculine—*e.g.*:

áproán, a hillock.

maitear, goodness.

(e) The diminutives ending in ín are usually said to be of the same gender as the noun from which they are derived. Notwithstanding this rule they seem to be all masculine. Caitín, a girl, is masculine,\* i. e. it suffers the same initial changes as a masculine noun, *but the pronoun referring to it is feminine*. She is a **fine** girl, 1r̄ breáḡ an caitín í (not é).

(f) Many nouns which end in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a broad vowel are masculine: as batt, a limb; tuac̄, a price; cpann, a tree, &c.

*Exceptions*:—(1) All words of two or more syllables ending in ac̄t or óḡ.

---

\* Do not confound sex with gender. Gender is decided by grammatical usage only.

(2) A large number of nouns ending in a broad consonant are feminine. A very full list of commonly used feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant will be found in Appendix II.

### FEMININE NOUNS.

43. (a) Names of females and designations of females are feminine: bean, a woman; ceapc, a hen; mátcair, a mother; ingean, a daughter.

(b) The names of countries and rivers are feminine: as Éire, Ireland; an Liffe, the Liffey; an Bhearra, the Barrow.

(c) Words of two or more syllables ending in áct or in óg are feminine: as fúireóg, a lark; tóireóg, a briar; mítreáct, sweetness; leamnáct, new-milk.

(d) All abstract nouns formed from the genitive singular feminine of adjectives are feminine: as áiríe, height—from áirí, high; áitne, beauty—from áluinn, beautiful; taitle, blindness—from tait, blind.

(e) Nouns ending in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a slender vowel, are feminine: as tír, country; onóir, honour; uair, an hour; rúil, an eye.

*Exceptions*:—(1) Personal nouns ending in óir. (2) Diminutives in ín. (3) Names of males, as átcair, a father; buacáit, a boy. (4) Also the following nouns:—buairí, a victory; tóim, the back; ainm,\* a name; speim, a piece; geit, a fright, a start; and foclóir, dictionary, vocabulary.

---

\* Ainm is feminine in S. Munster.

## II. CASE.

44. In Irish there are five cases—the **Nominative**, **Accusative**, **Genitive**, **Dative**, and **Vocative**.

The **Nominative** case in Irish corresponds to the English nominative when the subject of a verb.

The **Accusative** corresponds to the English objective case when governed by a transitive verb. The accusative case of every noun in modern Irish has the same form as the nominative, and suffers the same initial changes as regards aspiration and eclipsis.

The **Genitive** case corresponds to the English possessive case. English nouns in the possessive case or in the objective case, preceded by the preposition “of,” are usually translated into Irish by the genitive case.

The **Dative** case is the case governed by prepositions.

The **Vocative** corresponds to the English nominative of address. It is always used in addressing a person or persons. It is preceded by the sign  $\Delta$ , although “O” may not appear before the English word; but this  $\Delta$  is not usually pronounced before a vowel or  $\text{ř}$ .

### RULES FOR THE FORMATION OF THE CASES.

**N.B.**—These rules apply to all the declensions.

45. The **Nominative** case singular is always the simple form of the noun.

46. The **Dative case singular** is the same as the nominative singular, except (1) in the 2nd declension, when the noun ends in a broad consonant; (2) in most of the nouns of the 5th declension.

47. The **Vocative case singular** is always the same as the nominative singular, except in the 1st declension, in which it is like the genitive singular.

48. Whenever the nominative plural is formed by the addition of *τε*, *τα*, *αννα*, *αα*, *ι* or *ιρε*, &c., it is called a **strong nominative plural**. Strong plurals are usually found with nouns whose nominative singular ends in a liquid.

Those ending in *ι* or *η* generally take *τα* or *τε*.

„	<i>η</i> or <i>η</i>	„	<i>αννα</i> .
„	<i>η</i>	„	<i>αα</i> .

### The Genitive Plural.

49. (1) The genitive plural in the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd declensions is like the nominative singular, except strong plurals, and a few nouns which drop the *ι* of the nominative singular, as *ρῦτ*, an eye, gen. pl. *ρῦτ*.

(2) In the 4th declension, and in the case of nearly all strong plurals, the genitive plural is like the nominative plural.

(3) In the 5th declension the genitive plural is like the genitive singular.

50.

**The Dative Plural.**

(1) When the nominative plural ends in *а* or a consonant, the dative plural ends in *аѣ*.

(2) When the nominative plural ends in *е*, the dative plural is formed by changing the *е* into *ѣ*.

(3) When the nominative plural ends in *і*, the dative plural is formed by adding *ѣ*.

The termination of the dative plural is not always used in the spoken language.

**Vocative Plural.**

51. (1) When the dative plural ends in *аѣ*, the vocative plural is formed by dropping the *ѣ* of the dative.

(2) In all other cases it is like the nominative plural.

**III. The Declensions.**

52. The number of declensions is not quite settled: it is very much a matter of convenience. Five is the number usually reckoned.

The declensions are known by the inflection of the genitive singular.

**THE FIRST DECLENSION.**

53. All the nouns of the first declension are masculine, and end in a broad consonant.

All masculine nouns ending in a broad consonant *are not* of the first declension.

54. The genitive singular is formed by attenuating the nominative. In most nouns of the 1st declension this is done by simply placing an *і* after the last broad vowel of the nominative.



**Example.**

55.                    *μαορ*, a steward.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>μαορ</i>	<i>μαοιρ</i>
Gen.	<i>μαοιρ</i>	<i>μαορ</i>
Dat.	<i>μαορ</i>	<i>μαοραιϑ</i>
Voc.	<i>α μαοιρ</i>	<i>α μαορα</i>

56. In words of more than one syllable, if the nominative ends in *αε* or *εαε*, the genitive singular is formed by changing *αε* or *εαε* into *αις* or *ις* respectively. With a few exceptions, the nominative plural of these nouns is like the genitive singular. The other cases are quite regular.

In monosyllables *ε* is not changed into *ς*; as *βρυαε*, a brink, gen. *βρυαιε*.

**N.B.**—In all the declensions in words of more than one syllable *αε* and *εαε*, when attenuated, become *αις* and *ις*; and *αις* and *ις* when made broad become *αε* and *εαε*. See dat. pl. of *μαρκαε* and *κοιταε*.

**Examples.**

57.                    *μαρκαε*, a horseman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>μαρκαε</i>	<i>μαρκαις</i>
Gen.	<i>μαρκαις</i>	<i>μαρκαε</i>
Dat.	<i>μαρκαε</i>	<i>μαρκαεαιϑ</i>
Voc.	<i>α μαρκαις</i>	<i>α μαρκαεα</i>

**N.B.**—The majority of nouns in *αε* belonging to this declension are declined like *μαρκαε*.



## 58. uataċ, a load, burden.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	uataċ	uataiġe
Gen.	uataiġ	uataċ
Dat.	uataċ	uataiġib
Voc.	Δ uataiġ	Δ uataiġe

muttaċ, a summit; eutaċ, cloth; beataċ, a path, a way; ortalċ, an inch; and donat, a fair, are declined like uataċ. donat has nom. pl. donaiġe or dontaiġe.

## 59. coiteat, a cock.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	coiteat	coitaiġ
Gen.	coitaiġ	coiteat
Dat.	coiteat	coiteatib
Voc.	Δ coitaiġ	Δ coiteat

60. Besides the above simple method of forming the genitive singular of most nouns of this declension, there are also the following modifications of the vowels of the nominative singular:—

Change eu or éa in nom. sing. into éi in gen. sing.

„	ia	„	„	éi	„
„	o (short)	„	„	ui	„
io or ea		„	usually	„	i

All the other cases of these nouns are formed in accordance with the rules given above.

## Examples of Vowel-changes in Genitive Singular.

61. eun, a bird.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	eun	éin
Gen.	éin	eun
Dat.	eun	eunaib
Voc.	Δ éin	Δ euna

62. fear, a man.

Nom. & Acc.	fear	fír
Gen.	fír	fear
Dat.	fear	fearaib
Voc.	Δ fír	Δ feara

N.B.—The gen. of oiteán in island is oiteáin; of féar, grass, féir; and of fear, a man, fír.

63. Cnoc, a hill.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnoc	cnuic
Gen.	cnuic	cnoc
Dat.	cnoc	cnocaib
Voc.	Δ énuic	Δ énoc

64. The following nouns change ea into eí in genitive singular:—leánb, a child; neart, strength; cneap, skin; and ceart, right, justice. (Cnir and cnir are sometimes found as the genitives of cneap and ceart).

### Irregular Genitive Singular.

mac, a son,	has	genitive mic
bíad, food,	„	„ bíó
rian, a track,	„	„ ríain
rrian, a bridle,	„	„ rríain
brian, Bernard, Brian	„	„ bríain

neac, a person; and éinne, aonne (or aonneac), anybody, are indeclinable.

65. Some nouns of this declension form their nominative plural by adding e.

NOUN.	GENITIVE SING.	NOM. PLURAL.
donac, a fair	donais	{ dontaisge donaisge
doir, a door	doir	doiríe
éigear, a learned man	éigir	éigre
aingeal, an angel	aingil	aingle
bótar, a road	bótar	bóiríe
maoirad or (maoad), a dog	maoirad	maoiríde
rlaórad, a chain	rlaórad	rlaóiríde
marḡad, a market	marḡad	marḡíde

66 The following nouns take a in nominative plural:—peann, a pen; reot, a jewel; rlan, a surety; cneap, skin; meacan, a carrot or parsnip; tear, a tear; caor, a berry; rmeur, a blackberry; uball, an apple (pl ubla); focat (pl. focait or focla); riad,\* a debt (riad, pl. féic or féig, a raven); rḡeul, news; and briuac, a brink.

67. The following take ta, in nom. pl.:—reot, a sail; ceot, music; neut, a cloud; rḡeul, a story; coḡad,

\* This word is usually used in the plural; as ní fuit don riada oim, I am not in debt.

war (pl.  $\text{cog}\tau\alpha^*$ );  $\text{cuan}$ , a harbour;  $\tau\acute{o}\nu\eta$ , a fort (pl.  $\tau\acute{o}\nu\eta\tau\alpha$  and  $\tau\acute{o}\nu\eta\alpha$ );  $\text{ceuro}$ , a hundred†;  $\tau\iota\omicron\eta$ , a net;  $\text{ceap}$  a trunk of a tree (pl.  $\text{ceap}\tau\alpha$ );  $\mu\acute{\upsilon}\rho$  (pl.  $\mu\acute{\upsilon}\rho\tau\alpha$ ), a wall.

68. Other nominative plurals— $\text{cl}\acute{\alpha}\rho$ , a board, a table, makes  $\text{cl}\acute{\alpha}\rho$  or  $\text{cl}\acute{\alpha}\rho\alpha\tau\alpha$ ;  $\text{to}\beta\alpha\rho$ , a well, makes  $\text{to}\beta\alpha\rho$  or  $\text{to}\beta\alpha\rho\alpha\tau\alpha$ ,  $\text{to}\beta\alpha\rho\epsilon\alpha\tau\alpha$  or  $\text{to}\iota\beta\rho\epsilon\alpha\tau\alpha$ :  $\rho\lambda\upsilon\alpha\varsigma$ , a crowd, makes  $\rho\lambda\upsilon\alpha\iota\varsigma\tau\epsilon$ .

69. Many nouns of this declension have two or more forms in the nominative plural. The regular plural is the better one, though the others are also used. The following are a few examples of such nouns:— $\rho\epsilon\alpha\rho$ , a man (pl.  $\rho\epsilon\rho$ ,  $\rho\epsilon\alpha\rho\alpha$ );  $\mu\alpha\varsigma$ , a son (pl.  $\mu\iota\varsigma$ ,  $\mu\alpha\varsigma\alpha$ );  $\text{te}\alpha\upsilon\beta\alpha\rho$ , a book ( $\text{te}\alpha\upsilon\beta\alpha\rho$ ,  $\text{te}\alpha\upsilon\beta\eta\alpha$ );  $\alpha\rho\mu$ , an army (pl.  $\alpha\rho\mu$ ,  $\alpha\rho\mu\alpha$ );  $\text{ca}\rho\alpha\tau\tau$ , a horse (pl.  $\text{ca}\rho\alpha\tau\tau$ ,  $\text{ca}\rho\tau\epsilon$ ).

70. The termination  $-\rho\alpha\theta$  has a collective, not a plural force; just like *ry* in the English words *cavalry*, *infantry*, etc. This termination was formerly *neuter*, but now it is masculine or feminine; the genitive masculine being  $-\rho\alpha\iota\theta$ , the genitive feminine  $-\rho\alpha\iota\theta\epsilon$ . Hence  $\text{tao}\epsilon\rho\alpha\theta$ , *a band of warriors*,  $\mu\alpha\varsigma\rho\alpha\theta$ , *a company of youths*,  $\epsilon\alpha\epsilon\rho\alpha\theta$ , *a number of steeds (cavalry)*, are not really plurals of  $\text{tao}\epsilon$ ,  $\mu\alpha\varsigma$ , and  $\epsilon\alpha\epsilon$ , but collective nouns formed from them. Likewise  $\epsilon\alpha\tau\alpha\iota\tau$ , (spoken form,  $\epsilon\alpha\tau\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon$ ) is a collective noun meaning *a flock of birds*, or *birds in general*, and it is not really the plural of  $\epsilon\alpha\eta$ . However,  $\text{tao}\epsilon\rho\alpha\theta$  and  $\epsilon\alpha\tau\alpha\iota\tau$  are now used as plurals.

Appendix I. gives a list of nouns belonging to this declension.

\*  $\text{cog}\alpha\iota\theta\epsilon$  is also used.

† When used as a noun.

## THE SECOND DECLENSION.

71. All nouns of the 2nd declension are feminine.\* They all end in consonants, but the consonants may be either broad or slender.

72. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding *e*, (if the last vowel of the nominative be broad it must be attenuated); and if the last consonant be *ć* it is changed into *ǵ* in the genitive (except in words of one syllable).

73. The **dative singular** is got by dropping the final *e* of the genitive.

74. The **nominative plural** is formed by adding *Δ* or *e* (*Δ*, if final consonant be broad) to the nom. sing.

## Examples.

75.	լիւ, a lily.	
	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	լիւ	լիւե
Gen.	լիւե	լիւ
Dat.	լիւ	լիւիւ
Voc.	Δ ւիւ	Δ ւիւե
76.	cor, a foot† or a leg.	
Nom. & Acc.	cor	corΔ
Gen.	coire	cor
Dat.	cor	corΔիւ
Voc.	Δ օcor	Δ օcorΔ

---

\* *Եւս* and *բլիս*, two masculine nouns, are sometimes given with the second declension. We give them as irregular nouns (par. 132).

† A foot in measurement is *տրոս*, pl. *տրոսցե*.

## 77.                   cailleac, a hag.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cailleac	cailleaca
Gen.	cailleige	cailleac
Dat.	cailleig	cailleacaib
Voc.	a cailleac	a cailleaca

78. Like nouns of 1st declension, the vowels of the nom. sing. are sometimes changed when the final consonant is attenuated in the genitive singular.

The following are the chief changes:—

Change *io* in the nom. sing. into *i* in the gen. sing

„	eu	„	„	éi	„
„	ia	„	„	éi	„
„	o (short) sometimes	„	ui	„	„

In words of one syllable change *ea* into *eí* (but *cearc*, a hen, becomes *círcce*); in words of more than one syllable change *ea* into *i*.

## 79.                   beac, a bee.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	beac	beaca
Gen.	beice	beac
Dat.	beic	beacaib
Voc.	a beac	a beaca

## 80.                   zeug, a branch.

Nom. & Acc.	zeug	zeuga
Gen.	zeige	zeug
Dat.	zeig	zeugaib
Voc.	a zeug	a zeuga



81.

Srian, a sun.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	Srian	Sriana, Srianta
Gen.	Sríine	Srian
Dat.	Sríin	Srianaib
Voc.	Δ Srian	Δ Sriana

82.

long, a ship.

Nom. & Acc.	long	longa
Gen.	luinge	long
Dat.	luing	longaib
Voc.	Δ long	Δ longa

83.

rreum,\* a root.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	rreum	rreuma (or rreumača)
Gen.	rreíme	rreum (rreumača)
Dat.	rreím	rreumaib (rreumačaib)
Voc.	Δ rreum	Δ rreuma (Δ rreumača)

84.

áit, a place.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	áit	áite, áiteanna or áiteača
Gen.	áite	áit, áiteanna, áiteača
Dat.	áit	áitib, áiteannaib, áiteačaib
Voc.	Δ áit	Δ áite, áiteanna, áiteača

The above are two examples of nouns with strong nominative plural (see par. 48).

85. In forming the genitive, nouns are sometimes

---

\* Also spelled ppeum in Munster.

syncopated, as buiròean, a company, gen. buiròne (see pars. 33, 35); bhuiròean, a palace, gen. sing. bhuiròne.\*

### 86. Irregular Genitives Singular.

clann, a clan, children, makes	{ cloinne,	pl. clanna
deòc, a drink,	„ oige,	„ deòca
rìgan, a knife,	„ rìgine,	„ rìgeana
briathar, a (solemn) word,	„ bréicre,	„ briathra
blátaç, buttermilk,	„ bláitche†	
laçaç, mud, mire,	„ laitche‡	
uabac, a vat,	„ uaiùce	„ uabaca
açaib, a face,	„ aichte	„ aichte

87. Many nouns of this declension form their nominative plural in anna or aca. The final a of these terminations *may* be dropped in the genitive plural.

NOM. SING.	NOM. PL.
cúir, a cause	cúireanna
luib, an herb	luibeanna
veit, a lathe	veiteanna
gluair, a contrivance	gluairéanna
béim, a stroke	béimeanna
ouair, a prize, reward	ouaireanna
léim, a leap	léimeanna
réim, a course, a voyage	réimeanna
áit, a place	áite, áiteanna, áiteaca
luç, a mouse	luça, luçanna [teaca
rìoit, a school	rìoitheanna (rìoitca), rìoit-

\* Note the dative singular of these nouns, buiròin and bhuiròin.

†Also blátaige.

‡Also laçaige.

NOM. SING.	NOM. PL.
céim, a step	céimeanna
fuaim, a sound	fuamanna
uair, an hour, time	uairí, uairéanna, uairéanta
sráid, a street	sráide, sráideanna, sráideacha
páirc, a field	páirce, páirceanna
feir, a festival	feireanna

88. Nouns that take *acha* in nominative plural—

obair, a work	oibreacha
óráid, an oration	óráideacha
rlat, a rod	rlata, rlatacha
litir, a letter	litirí, litiríacha
uib, an egg	uibí, uibíacha
raigir, a prayer	raigiríacha
aicid, a disease	aicídeacha, aicidí
ciúmhair, an edgo	ciúmhairíacha
coictróir, a fortnight	coictróiríacha, coictróirí
truaill, a sheathe, a scabbard	truaillíacha
leac, a flag, a flat stone	leaca, leacaí, leacraí

89. The following take *te*, *ce*, or *ta* in the nominative plural; *ach* may be added in the genitive plural:—*coill*\*, a wood; *túr*, a pillar, a prop; *tír*, a country (pl. *tíortha*); *ághaid*, face (pl. *aigíde*); *rpeuir*, a sky, *rpeuirí*.

90. Sometimes when the last vowel of the nominative singular is *i* preceded by a broad vowel, the

---

\* *coill* is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.

genitive plural is formed by dropping the *i*, as *ῥύτι*, an eye, gen. pl. *ῥύτι*; *ῥυαίμ*, a sound, gen. pl. *ῥυαίμ*, &c.

For a list of nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to this declension, see Appendix II.

### THIRD DECLENSION.

91. The 3rd declension includes (1) personal nouns ending in *οῖν* (all masculine), (2) derived nouns in *ἄτ* or *ἄο* (feminine), (3) other nouns ending in consonants which are, as a rule, masculine or feminine according as they end in broad or slender consonants.

92. The genitive singular is formed by adding *α*. If the last vowel of the nominative be *i* preceded by a broad vowel, the *i* is usually dropped in the gen., as *τοῖτ*, a will, gen. *τοῖα*.

93. The nominative plural is usually the same as the genitive singular; but personal nouns ending in *οῖν* add *i* or *ιόε* to the nominative singular.

94. Most of the derived nouns in *ἄτ*, being abstract in meaning, do not admit of a plural. *μάττατ*, a curse, and a few others have plurals. *ῥυἄτ*, cold, although an abstract noun in *ἄτ*, is masculine.

95. The vowels of the nominative often undergo a change in the formation of the genitive singular. These changes are just the reverse of the vowel changes of the 1st and 2nd declensions (see pars. 60 and 78).

Change ei, i or io (short) in nom. into eΔ in the genitive

„	u „ ui	„	„	o	„
„	éi	„	„	éΔ	„

### Examples.

96. cnám,\* a bone.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnám	cnáma
Gen.	cnáma	cnám
Dat.	cnám	cnámΔib
Voc.	Δ cnám	Δ cnáma

97. řion, wine.

Nom. & Acc.	řion	řiona, řionτα
Gen.	řiona	řion
Dat.	řion	řionaib
Voc.	Δ řion	Δ řiona

98. cμop, a belt, a girdle.

Nom. & Acc.	cμop	cμeapa
Gen.	cμeapa	cμop
Dat.	cμop	cμeapaib
Voc.	Δ cμop	Δ cμeapa

99. řeoit, flesh, meat.

Nom. & Acc.	řeoit	řeota
Gen.	řeota	řeoit
Dat.	řeoit	řeotaib
Voc.	Δ řeoit	Δ řeota

---

\*Also spelled cnáin in nom. sing.

## 100.            բձօժիր, a boatman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	բձօժիր	բձօժիրի (բձօժիրո՞ւծե)
Gen.	բձօժրձ	բձօժիր, բձօժիրի
Dat.	բձօժիր	բձօժիրի՛ն (բձօժիրո՞ւծի՛ն)
Voc.	ձ Բձօժիր	ձ Բձօժիրի (ձ Բձօժիրո՞ւծե)

## 101.            օրսւմ, masc., the back.

Nom. & Acc.	օրսւմ	օրօմանն
Gen.	օրօմձ	օրօմանն
Dat.	օրսւմ	օրօմաննա՛ն
Voc.	ձ օրսւմ	ձ օրօմանն

## 102.            չրեմ, masc., a morsel, grip.

Nom. & Acc.	չրեմ	չրեմանն
Gen.	չրեմձ	չրեմանն
Dat.	չրեմ	չրեմաննա՛ն
Voc.	ձ չրեմ	ձ չրեմանն

103. Some nouns of this declension, ending in լ or ռ, form their nominative pl. by adding լա or լե to the nom. sing. These may add ձօ to form gen. pl., as—

մօմ,* a bog,	nom. pl.	մօմլե
ւճին, a drove,	„	ւճիմլե
վիւծան, a year,	„	վիւծանլա†

\* մօմ is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite Nouns, par. 131.

† վիւծոնա after numerals, as օժտ մվիւծոնա, eight years.



**104.** Some nouns of this declension form their nom. plural by adding *anna* to the gen. singular. These may drop the final *a* in the gen. plural:—

NOM. PLURAL.

am, time	amann̄ta	or amanna
rruṭ, a stream	rruṭ̄a	„ rruṭ̄anna
opum, m., a back		opum̄anna
ṣuṭ, a voice	ṣuṭ̄a	„ ṣuṭ̄anna
ṣpeim, m., a morsel		ṣpeim̄anna
cit̄, or cioṭ̄, a shower	ceat̄a	„ ceat̄anna
cleap, a trick	cleap̄a	„ cleap̄anna
anam, a soul	anna	„ annanna
ṭaṭ̄, a colour	ṭaṭ̄a	„ ṭaṭ̄anna
ainm, a name	ainmne, ainmneat̄a,	ainmanna
maṛom, a defeat	maṛoma, maṛom̄anna	

**105. Other Nominatives Plural.**

ṣn̄iom̄, a deed, an act makes ṣn̄iom̄ap̄t̄a\*

conn̄p̄aṝo, a compact,

covenant	„	conn̄ap̄t̄a
cáin†, a tax	„	cánaṭ̄a
buaṭ̄cailí, a boy	„	buaṭ̄cailí
cliam̄ain, a son-in-law	„	cliam̄naṭ̄a
leabaṝo, ‡ f., a bed	„	leab̄t̄a, leap̄t̄aṭ̄a, leap̄t̄a
curo, a share, a portion	„	cor̄t̄a, cor̄ana

For a list of nouns belonging to this declension, see Appendix III.

\* Really pl. of ṣn̄iom̄p̄aṝo. † Cáin is also 5th declension.

‡ Also spelled leabaṝo.

## THE FOURTH DECLENSION.

**106.** The 4th declension includes (1) personal nouns in  $\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon$ ,  $\alpha\iota\omicron\epsilon$ ,  $\upsilon\iota\omicron\epsilon$ ,  $\alpha\iota\zeta\epsilon$  (sometimes spelled  $\alpha\iota\omicron$ ,  $\upsilon\iota\omicron$ ,  $\alpha\iota\zeta$ ), which are all masculine; (2) diminutives in  $\iota\iota$  (said to be all masculine); (3) abstract derivatives formed from the gen. sing. feminine of adjectives (all feminine), as  $\zeta\iota\tau\epsilon$ , brightness, from  $\zeta\epsilon\alpha\tau$ ;  $\pi\acute{\epsilon}\iota\tau\epsilon$ , generosity, from  $\pi\acute{\iota}\alpha\tau$ ;  $\acute{\alpha}\iota\tau\eta$ , beauty, from  $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\upsilon\eta\eta$ , &c.; (4) all nouns ending in vowels, and which do not belong to the 5th declension. To assist the student a list of the most important nouns of the 5th declension is given in the Appendix IV.

**107.** This declension differs from all others in having all the cases of the singular exactly alike.

**108.** The nominative plural is usually formed by adding  $\iota$ ,  $\iota\omicron\epsilon$  or  $\alpha\omicron\alpha$ .

**109.** The genitive plural is like the nom. pl., but  $\epsilon\alpha\omicron$  is frequently added in other grammars. There is no necessity whatever for this, because both cases are pronounced alike.

**110.** Nouns of more than one syllable ending in  $\alpha$  form their nom. plural in  $\alpha\iota\omicron\epsilon$ , or  $\alpha\acute{\iota}$ , as  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha$ , a bag, pl.  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\iota\omicron\epsilon$ , or  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\acute{\iota}$ ;  $\kappa\omicron\tau\alpha$ , a coat, pl.  $\kappa\omicron\tau\alpha\iota\omicron\epsilon$ , or  $\kappa\omicron\tau\alpha\acute{\iota}$ .

## 111.                   cailín, masc., a girl.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cailín	cailíní or (cailíníóe)
Gen.	cailín	cailíní (cailín) ,, (cailíníóe)
Dat.	cailín	cailíníob ,, (cailíníóib)
Voc.	á cailín	á cailíní ,, (á cailíníóe)

## 112.                   tígearna a lord.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	tígearna	tígearnaí(-aíóe)
Gen.	tígearna	tígearnaí(-aíóe)
Dat.	tígearna	tígearnaíob(-aíóib)
Voc.	á tígearna	á tígearnaí(-aíóe)

113. The following nouns take *te* immediately after the last consonant to form the nominative plural:—

bailte, a town	plural bailte or bailteada
plóinne, a surname	,, plóinnite
múlte, a mule	,, múluite
míle, a thousand, a mile	,, mílte*
léine, a shirt	,, léinte, léinteada
teine,† a fire	,, teinte, teinteada
cúinne, a corner	,, cúinnite cúinní

114. The following nouns add *te* in nominative plural, viz., all nouns ending in *óe* or *ge*—e.g. *croíóe*, a heart, pl. *croíóte*; also *caoi*, a way, a method; *ṽaoi*, a fool; *ṽaoi*, a wise man; *ṽaoi*, a druid; *ṽaoi*, a curl.

\* *míle*, a thousand, or a mile, is invariable after a numeral.

† *teine* is also 5th. See *Heteroclite nouns*, par. 131.

ḡnó, a work (pl. ḡnóḡa),\* níò, or ní, a thing (pl. neíte); ouine, a person, makes oaoine in nom. pl.

uinge, an ounce,	„	uingeac̃a	„
earna, a rib,	„	earnac̃a	„

115. A few proper nouns, although not ending in a vowel or in, belong to this declension, and do not change their form in any of their cases, viz.:—  
páorais, Patrick; ḡearóio, Gerald; maur, Maurice; Caḡaoir, Cahir.

The word tuḡt, a people, does not change in gen.

## THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

116. Most of the nouns belonging to this declension end in a vowel, and are, with a few exceptions, feminine.

117. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding a *broad consonant*.

This consonant varies in different nouns, but is usually n, nn, sometimes o, ó, or c̃. When the nominative singular ends in a consonant, a or ea comes between that consonant and the consonant added.

118. The **dative singular** is formed by attenuating the genitive. In the case of those nouns which form the genitive by adding c̃, the dative singular is usually like the nominative.

---

\*ḡnóḡaíoe is spoken in Kerry.

119. The nominative plural, as a general rule, is formed by adding *α* to the genitive singular. A few form their nominative plural by adding *ε* to the gen. sing. This is accompanied with syncope, as in *cáιpoe*, friends; *náιmoe*, enemies; *ξαιbne*, smiths; and *αιbne*, rivers, which are the plurals of *capa*, *náma*, *ξαbα*, and *αb*, or *αbα*.

Some others form the nominative plural by attenuating the genitive singular, as in *ταcαιν*, ducks; *coin*, hounds; *picio*, twenty; *caoirig*, sheep; *comuprain*, neighbours.

The genitive plural is exactly like the genitive singular.

### Examples.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
120.	<i>peapra</i> , fem., a person.	
Nom. & Acc.	<i>peapra</i>	<i>peapraua</i>
Gen.	<i>peapran</i>	<i>peapran</i>
Dat.	<i>peaprain</i>	<i>peapranaiub</i>
Voc.	<i>α peapra</i>	<i>α peapraua</i>

121.	<i>capa</i> , fem., a friend.	
Nom. & Acc.	<i>capa</i>	<i>cáipoe</i>
Gen.	<i>capao</i>	<i>capao</i>
Dat.	<i>capaiuo</i>	<i>cáipoiub</i>
Voc.	<i>α capa</i>	<i>α cáipoe</i>

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
122.	ḡab̃a, masc., a smith.	
Nom. & Acc.	ḡab̃a	ḡaib̃ne
Gen.	ḡab̃ann	ḡab̃ann
Dat.	ḡab̃ainn	ḡaib̃niō
Voc.	Δ ḡab̃a	Δ ḡaib̃ne
123.	lač̃a, fem., a duck.	
Nom. & Acc.	lač̃a	lač̃ain
Gen.	lač̃an	lač̃an
Dat.	lač̃ain	lač̃anaib̃
Voc.	Δ lač̃a	Δ lač̃ana
124.	cuir̃le, fem., a vein.	
Nom. & Acc.	cuir̃le	cuir̃leam̃.Δ
Gen.	cuir̃leann	cuir̃leann
Dat.	cuir̃linn	cuir̃leannaib̃
Voc.	Δ cuir̃le	Δ cuir̃leanna
125.	caora, fem., a sheep.	
Nom. & Acc.	caora	caoir̃iḡ
Gen.	caorač̃	caorač̃
Dat.	caoraḡ	caorač̃aib̃, caorač̃aib̃
Voc.	Δ caora	Δ caorač̃a or Δ caorač̃a
126.	cač̃aoir̃, fem., a chair.	
Nom. & Acc.	cač̃aoir̃	cač̃aoir̃eač̃a
Gen.	cač̃aoir̃eač̃	cač̃aoir̃eač̃
Dat.	cač̃aoir̃	cač̃aoir̃eač̃aib̃
Voc.	Δ cač̃aoir̃	Δ cač̃aoir̃eač̃a



## SINGULAR (no Plural).

127.      Nom. & Acc.    Éire (Ireland)  
                  Gen.        Éireann  
                  Dat.        Éirinn  
                  Voc.        a Éire
128.      Nom. & Acc.    Teamaí (Tara)  
                  Gen.        Teamá  
                  Dat.        Teamáig or Teamá  
                  Voc.        a Teamá
129.      Nom. & Acc.    Alba (Scotland)  
                  Gen.        Alban  
                  Dat.        Albain  
                  Voc.        a Alba

130. The following nouns are used only in the plural, referring originally rather to the *inhabitants* of the place than to the place itself :—

## SACRANA, England.

Nom. & Acc.	Sacrana or Sacraín
Gen.	Sacraí
Dat.	Sacranaib

	Laigin,	Connaçta,	Ulaid,
	Leinster.	Connaught.	Ulster
Nom. & Acc.	Laigin	Connaçta	Ulaid
Gen.	Laigean	Connaçt	Ulad
Dat.	Laiginib	Connaçtaib	Ultaib

A large list of the commonly used nouns, which belong to this declension, are given in Appendix IV.

### Heteroclite Nouns.

131. Heteroclite nouns are those which belong to more than one declension. The following are the chief nouns of this class. We give only the genitive case in the singular, as the other cases present no difficulty. The irregular nominative plurals only are given :—

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
briatair, a word	1 & 2	{ briatair briéirne	
ršiat, a shield	1 & 2	{ ršéit ršéirte	
teine, a fire	4 & 5	{ teine teinearó	teinte
beata, life	4 & 5	{ beata beataró	
riše, a way	4 & 5	{ riše rišearó	rište
coill, a wood	2 & 5	{ coille coillearó	coillte
móin, a bog	3 & 5	{ móina móinaró	móinte
talaim, m., land	1 & 5	{ talaim, m. talaiman, f.	
eorina, barley	4 & 5	{ eorina eorinan	
brieteam, a judge	1 & 5	{ brietím brieteamán	{ brieteamán brieteamna

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
φεῖεαμ, a debtor	1 & 5	{ φεῖεῖμ φεῖεαμᾶν	{ φεῖεαμᾶιν φεῖεαμῖνα
ῥρόν, f., a nose	2 & 3	{ ῥρόνι ῥρόνα	
κουά, a cuckoo	1 & 2	{ κουαί, m. κουαίε, f.	κουαί κουάα
κόμῤα, a coffer, coffin	4 & 5	{ κόμῤα κόμῤαν	κόμῤαᾶ
κάιν, a tax	3 & 5	{ κάῖνα κάῖναδ	κάῖνα κάῖναδᾶ
κορόν, a crown	2 & 5	{ κορόνι κορόναδ κορόναδ	κορόναδᾶ

All abstract nouns ending in εαρ or αρ may belong either to the 1st or 3rd declension; as, αοῖβνεαρ, pleasure, gen. αοῖβνιρ or αοῖβνεαρᾶ. Being abstract nouns they are seldom used in the plural.

### Irregular Nouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
132.	τεαδ, masc., a house.	
Nom. & Acc.	τεαδ, τῖς	τῖςτε
Gen.	τῖςε*	τῖςτε(αὐ), τεαδ
Dat.	τεαδ, τῖς	τῖςτιῖ
Voc.	α τεαδ, τῖς	α τῖςτε

---

\* It has also the forms τοῖςε in gen. and τοῖς in dative.

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

րևած, masc., a mountain.

Nom. & Acc.	րևած	րևածե
Gen.	րևածե	րևածե
Dat.	րևած, րևած	րևածուծ
Voc.	ձ րևած	ձ րևածե

աժայր, masc., a father.

Nom. & Acc.	աժայր	աժրե or աժրեաճա
Gen.	աժար	աժրեաճ ,, աժրեաճա
Dat.	աժայր	աժրեաճաւծ
Voc.	ձ աժայր	ձ աժրե or ձ աժրեաճա

օւրծրւմ, f., a sister (*by blood*).

Nom. & Acc.	օւրծրւմ	օւրծրւմաճա
Gen.	օւրծրեաժար	օւրծրւմաճա
Dat.	օւրծրւմար	օւրծրւմաճաւծ

In these words the ծր is pronounced like բ.

The words մաժայր, *a mother*; Երաժայր, *a brother (in religion)*; and օւրծրեաժար, *a brother (by blood)*, are declined like աժայր. The genitive of րւմ, *a sister (in religion)*, is րեաժար (or րւմա).

## SINGULAR. PLURAL.

րի, masc., a king.

Nom. & Acc.	րի	րիճե, րիօճա, րիօճա
Gen.	րիօճ	րիճե, րիօճ
Dat.	րիճ	րիճուծ
Voc.	ձ րի	ձ րիճե

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

bean, fem., a woman.

Nom. & Acc.	bean	mnā
Gen.	mnā	ban
Dat.	mnaoi	mnāiḃ
Voc.	Δ bean	Δ mnā

bó, fem., a cow.

Nom. & Acc.	bó	bā
Gen.	bó	bó
Dat.	buin	buaiḃ
Voc.	Δ bó	Δ bā

Ḑia, masc., God.

Nom. & Acc.	Ḑia	Ḑée, Ḑéiṭe
Gen.	Ḑé	Ḑia, Ḑéiṭeao
Dat.	Ḑia	Ḑéiṭiḃ
Voc.	Δ Ḑé, Δ Ḑia Δ Ḑée	

lá, masc., a day.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

Nom. & Acc.	lá	laete, laeteanta*
Gen.	lae	laeteao, laeteanta, lá
Dat.	lō, lá	laetiḃ, laeteantaiḃ
Voc.	Δ lá	Δ laete, Δ laeteanta

cré, fem., soil, earth.

Nom. & Acc.	cré	créiōeana
Gen.	criao, créiōeao	criao
Dat.	créiō, cré	créiōeanaḃ
Voc.	Δ cré	Δ créiōeana

\* lá is generally used after numerals.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

mí, fem., a month.

Nom. & Acc.	mí	míora†
Gen.	míora	míor
Dat.	mír, mí	míoraib

ceó, masc., a fog.

Nom. & Acc.	ceó	ceóana, ceóca
Gen.	ciać, ceoiğ	ceó
Dat.	ceó	ceócaib

ğa, masc., a spear, javelin, sunbeam.

Nom. & Acc.	ğa	ğaete, ğaoi, ğaite
Gen.	ğa, ğae, ğaoi	ğaoite(ay), ğat
Dat.	ğa	ğaetið, ğaoitið

ó or ua, masc., a grandson.

Nom. & Acc.	ó, ua	uí
Gen.	í, uí	ua
Dat.	ó, ua	ib. uib
Voc.	a uí	a uí

ğé, masc., a goose

Nom. & Acc.	ğé or ğéay	ğéanna, ğéayá, ğéiðe
Gen.	ğé ,, ğéið, ğeoið	ğéanna, ğéay
Dat.	ğé ,, ğéay	ğéannaib, ğéayayib
Voc.	a ğé ,, a ğéay	a ğéanna, a ğéayá

fuiğ, fem., a fleshworm.

Nom. & Acc.	fuiğ	fuiğoeacá
Gen.	fuiğoe	fuiğoeac(á)
Dat.	fuiğio	fuiğoeacayib

† mí after numerals as oćt mí, 8 months: mionna is spoken in Kerry as plural of mí.



## CHAPTER III.

## The Adjective.

## I. DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES.

**133.** In Irish the adjective agrees with the noun which it qualifies in gender, number, and case.

**There are four declensions of adjectives.** Adjectives are declined very much like nouns; the great difference is that they never\* take the termination *ib* in the dative plural (though formerly they did). The dative plural is invariably like the nominative plural.

Adjectives, in forming their genitive singular, undergo the same VOWEL-CHANGES as nouns, as—

*gorum*, blue, gen. masc. *gairim*  
*geat*, bright, „ *git*, &c.

## FIRST DECLENSION.

**134.** All adjectives ending in a broad consonant, as *mór*, *bán*, *fionn*, &c., belong to the 1st declension.

**135.** When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a masculine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 1st declension (see *maor*, &c., pars. 55, 57), except that the nom., acc., dat., and voc. plural are always alike, and are formed by adding *a* to the nominative singular.

---

\*When used as nouns they take the termination.

136. When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a feminine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 2nd declension (see *cop*, par. 67, &c.), but it never takes *is* in the dative plural.

Adjectives ending in *ad* form their plural by adding *s*, both for masculine and feminine.

### Examples.

137.	μόρ, big.		
	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc. & Fem.
Nom. & Acc.	μόρ	μόρ	μόρs
Gen.	μόρ	μόρe	μόρ
Dat.	μόρ	μόρ	ιμόρs
Voc.	μόρ	μόρ	μόρs

138.	ζεal, bright.		
Nom. & Acc.	ζεal	ζεal	ζεals
Gen.	ζιλ	ζιλε	ζεal
Dat.	ζεal	ζιλ	ζεals
Voc.	ζιλ	ζεal	ζεals

139.	οίρεad, straight, direct.		
Nom. & Acc.	οίρεad	οίρεad	οίρεads
Gen.	οίρις	οίριςe	οίρεad
Dat.	οίρεad	οίρις	οίρεads
Voc.	οίρις	οίρεad	οίρεads

140. The following list of adjectives gives examples of the vowel-changes mentioned above. The genitive

masculine is given; the genitive feminine is formed by adding e:—

NOM.	GEN.		NOM.	GEN.	
lom	luim	bare	reapb	reipb	bitter
gorp	gairp	blue	reang	reing	slender
borb	bairb	rough	geup	géip	sharp
cpom	cpuim	bent	oípeac	oípiḡ	straight
tonn	tuinn	brown	uaigneac	uaigniḡ	lonely
boḡ	buiḡ	soft	Albanaḡ	Albanaiḡ	Scotch
boct	boict	poor	fionn	finn	fair
cpom	cpuim	heavy	fiat	féil	generous
meap	mip	active	fluic	flic	wet
ceapc	cipt (ceipt)		beag	bḡ	small
		right	cpion	cpin	withered
teap	teip	pretty	teann	teinn	stern
teapḡ	teipḡ	red			

141. There are five or six adjectives of the first declension which are syncopated in the genitive singular feminine and in the plural:—

NOMINATIVE.	GEN. SING.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Both Genders.
uapat, noble	uapail	uairle	uairle
oíteap, beloved, dear	oítir	oítire	oítire
reamap, fat	reamair	réimpe	reampa
íriol, low	íril	irle	irle
geapp, short	ḡip*	ḡioppa (irreg.)	geappa

\* ḡeappa is sometimes used in the spoken language.

136. When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a feminine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 2nd declension (see cop, par. 67, &c.), but it never takes *io* in the dative plural.

Adjectives ending in *ac* form their plural by adding *a*, both for masculine and feminine.

### Examples.

137.	mór, big.		
	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc. & Fem.
Nom. & Acc.	mór	mór	móra
Gen.	móru	móru	mór
Dat.	mór	móru	móra
Voc.	móru	mór	móra

138.	zeal, bright.		
Nom. & Acc.	zeal	zeal	zeala
Gen.	zil	zite	zeal
Dat.	zeal	zil	zeala
Voc.	zil	zeal	zeala

139.	oíread, straight, direct.		
Nom. & Acc.	oíread	oíread	oíreada
Gen.	oírui	oírui	oíread
Dat.	oíread	oírui	oíreada
Voc.	oírui	oíread	oíreada

140. The following list of adjectives gives examples of the vowel-changes mentioned above. The genitive

masculine is given; the genitive feminine is formed by adding e:—

NOM.	GEN.		NOM.	GEN.	
lom	luim	bare	readb	reipb	bitter
gorim	gairim	blue	reang	reing	slender
borb	buirb	rough	geup	geip	sharp
cpom	cruim	bent	oipeac	oipig	straight
donn	duinn	brown	uaigneac	uaignig	lonely
bog	buig	soft	Albanaic	Albanais	Scotch
boct	boict	poor	finn	finn	fair
cpom	cruim	heavy	fiat	feil	generous
meap	mir	active	fluic	fluc	wet
ceapc	cipc (ceipc)	right	beas	bis	small
deap	deir	pretty	cpion	cpin	withered
deapc	deirc	red	teann	teinn	stern

141. There are five or six adjectives of the first declension which are syncopated in the genitive singular feminine and in the plural:—

NOMINATIVE.	GEN. SING.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Both Genders.
uapal, noble	uapail	uairle	uairle
oiteap, beloved, dear	oitir	oitre	oitre
reamap, fat	reamair	reimre	reamra
iriot, low	iril	irle	irle
geapp, short	gair*	giorra (irreg.)	gearra

\* gearra is sometimes used in the spoken language.

## SECOND DECLENSION.

142. All adjectives ending in a slender consonant, except those in  $\Delta\mu\Delta\iota\iota$ , belong to the second declension.

In the singular all the cases, both masculine and feminine, are alike, *except the genitive feminine* which is formed by adding  $e$ .

In the plural both genders are alike. All the cases, with the exception of the genitive, are alike, and are formed by adding  $e$  to the nominative singular.

The genitive plural is the same as the nominative singular.

## Example.

143.

 $\mu\Delta\iota\tau$ , good.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

Masculine.

Feminine.

Both Genders.

Nom. &amp; Acc.

 $\mu\Delta\iota\tau$  $\mu\Delta\iota\tau$  $\mu\Delta\iota\tau e$ 

Gen.

 $\mu\Delta\iota\tau$  $\mu\Delta\iota\tau e$  $\mu\Delta\iota\tau$ 

Dat.

 $\mu\Delta\iota\tau$  $\mu\Delta\iota\tau$  $\mu\Delta\iota\tau e$ 

Voc.

 $\mu\Delta\iota\tau$  $\mu\Delta\iota\tau$  $\mu\Delta\iota\tau e$ 

144. Notice the following examples of syncope in the genitive feminine and in the plural:—

$\Delta\sigma\iota\upsilon\beta\eta\eta\eta$ , gen. sing. fem. and pl.  $\Delta\sigma\iota\upsilon\beta\eta e$ , pleasant

$\Delta\lambda\upsilon\eta\eta\eta$ , „ „  $\Delta\iota\eta e$  ( $\Delta\iota\eta e$ ), beautiful

$\mu\iota\lambda\eta$ , „ „  $\mu\iota\lambda e$ , sweet

145. The following adjectives are irregular:—

$\epsilon\omicron\iota\eta$ , gen. sing. fem. and plural  $\epsilon\omicron\iota\alpha$ , right, just

$\tau\epsilon\Delta\epsilon\alpha\eta$ , „ „  $\tau\epsilon\Delta\epsilon\alpha$ , difficult

$\rho\omicron\epsilon\alpha\eta$ , „ „  $\rho\omicron\epsilon\alpha$ , easy



## THE THIRD DECLENSION.

**146. The third declension includes all those adjectives which end in ἀνῆαι.** This termination has the same signification as the English affix *like* in warlike, or *ly* in manly, princely, &c.

In both numbers the two genders are alike. All the cases in the singular are the same, except the genitive, which is formed by adding α. This is always accompanied by syncope. All the cases of the plural (except the genitive) are the same as the gen. sing. There are no exceptions or irregularities in this declension.

**Example.**

<b>147.</b>	ῥεαῖανῆαι, manly.	
	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	Both Genders.	Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	ῥεαῖανῆαι	ῥεαῖανῆα
Gen.	ῥεαῖανῆα	ῥεαῖανῆαι
Dat.	ῥεαῖανῆαι	ῥεαῖανῆα
Voc.	ῥεαῖανῆαι	ῥεαῖανῆα

## FOURTH DECLENSION.

**148. All adjectives ending in a vowel belong to the fourth declension,** as ῥαυα, long; ὀρυα, golden. They have no inflexions whatever, all the cases, singular and plural, being exactly alike.

There are two exceptions—viz., *τε*, hot, warm; and *βεο*, alive. *Τε* (often spelled *τεῖτ*), becomes *τεο* in the genitive singular feminine, and also in the plural of both genders.

*Βεο*, alive, becomes *βεοῦα* in the plural. In the singular it is quite regular, except after the word *Θεῖα*; its genitive is then *βί*, as *μαρ Θέ βί*, the Son of the living God.

### Rules for the Aspiration of the Adjectives.

These rules really belong to Syntax, but for the convenience of the student we give them here.

**149. (a)** An adjective beginning with an aspirable consonant is aspirated in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, in the genitive masculine singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders.

**(b)** The adjective is also aspirated in the nominative and accusative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant.

### Exceptions to the Rules for Aspiration.

**150. (a)** An adjective beginning with *ο* or *τ* is usually not aspirated when the noun ends in *ο*, *η*, *τ*, *ι*, or *ρ* (dentals).

**(b)** *ς* and *ζ* are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in *ς*, *ζ*, or *η, ζ*.

**(c)** *π* and *β* are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in *π*, *β*, or *μ*.

These exceptions apply to most rules for the aspiration of nouns as well as adjectives.

(d) The **genitive** of nouns of the 3rd and 5th declensions ought not to have the initial of the adjective following them aspirated. Usage, however, differs somewhat on this point.

(e) In the spoken language of Connaught the adjective is not aspirated in the dative singular masculine.

### Rules for Eclipsing the Adjective.

**151. (a)** The adjective is usually eclipsed in the genitive plural, even though the article is not used before the noun; and if the adjective begins with a vowel *n* is prefixed.

(b) The initial of an adjective following a noun in the dative sing. should, as a rule, be aspirated; but whenever the noun is eclipsed after the article the adjective is often eclipsed also; aspiration in this case is just as correct as eclipsis, and is more usual.

### Examples

**152.** Noun, Adjective and Article declined in combination.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	an fear mór, the big man.	
Nom. & Acc.	an fear mór	na fear móra
Gen.	an fear móir	na bfeair mór
Dat.	leir an bfeair móir	leir na fearuib móra
Voc.	a fear móir	a feara móra

an *treampíos* star bead, the green little shamrock.

Nom. & Acc. ἀν τρεαμπρός ἑλάρ    να ρεαμπρόσα ἑλάρ  
                    ῥεας                                 βεας

Gen.    na reamróige slaire    na reamróg nslar  
             bise                                mbeas

Dat.    ὁ ν τρεαμπόγς γλαῖρ    ὁ na reampóγaib  
               βίς                                      γλαρα beaga

Voc.     Δ ῥεαμπίος    ἑλαρ    Δ ῥεαμπίοςΔ ἑλαρα  
              βεας                                  βεαςΔ

an *trean-bean bocht*, the poor old woman.

Nom. & Acc. an tpean-bean na pean-mná bocta  
boct

Gen.    na  pean - mna    na pean-ban mboct  
          boictre

Dat. το'ν τρεαν- το να ρεαν-μνάιβ  
 ἡνδοι βοιότ βοότα

Voc.     Δ ῥεαν - βεαν    Δ ῥεαν-ῖννά βοῦτα  
              βοῦτ

**N.B.**—When an adjective precedes its noun it is invariable.

## Comparison of Adjectives.

153. In Irish there are two comparisons—(1) the comparison of equality, (2) the comparison of superiority.

154. The comparison of equality is formed by placing com (or co), "as" or "so," before the adjective, and te, "as," after it. (This te becomes ter before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.)



parative sentence, the comparative must be preceded by the word *níor* (i.e., *ní* or *níò*, a thing, and the verb *ir*) as—

*Tá an ghrian níor gile ná an gealach,*  
The sun is brighter than the moon.

*An bfuil tú níor fearr ná do dhearbhadair?*  
Are you better than your brother?

**158.** As stated in previous paragraph *níor*=*ní* + *ir*. If the time of the comparison be past *ní ba* is used instead of *níor*. In conditional comparisons *ní baò* is employed.

*Ba dóic uim go raib ūna ní b'aoirde ná Máire.*  
I thought that ūna was taller than Máire.

**159. Every superlative sentence in Irish is a relative sentence.** Thus instead of saying "the best man" we say "the man (who) is best"; for "the tallest man," we say "the man (who) is tallest." The word "who" in this case is never translated, for the obvious reason that there is really no simple relative pronoun in Irish.

**160.** If the sentence happens to be in the past or future "the best man" will have to be translated as "the man (who) was best" or "the man (who) will be best." In such cases *ir* or *ar* can never be used. *Ba* or *buò* must be used in the past tense.



If the first portion of the sentence contains a verb in the conditional mood, the conditional of *ir* (viz., *ro bað*: *ro* is often omitted) must be used.

The highest hill in Ireland, *an cnoc ir áirde i n-Éirinn*.

The biggest man was sitting in the smallest chair,

*Uí an fear ba mó na fuirde iní an scaṭaoir ba tuḡa*.

The best man would have the horse,

*Ro beaḁ an capall as an b'fear ro b'fearr*  
(Lit. The horse would be at the man (who) would be best).

The **English comparative of Inferiority** is translated by *níor tuḡa* followed by an abstract noun corresponding to the English adjective: *e.g.*, *níor tuḡa fearmaiteaḁt*, less manly.

### Intensifying Particles.

**161.** The meaning of an adjective can be intensified by placing any of the following particles before the positive of the adjective. All these particles cause aspiration.

*An*, very; *fíor* (or *fír*), very or truly (as truly good); *níog*, very; *níog maíṫ*, very good.

*glé*, pure (as pure white); *mó*, too, excessively.

*íár*, exceedingly; *úir*, very (in a depreciating sense).

*maíṫ*, good; *an-maíṫ*, very good; *fíor-maíṫ*, truly good; *mó-fuar*, too cold.

*íár ṫe*, excessively hot (warm); *úir-íriol*, very low; *úir-ḡránaḁa*, very ugly.

**162.** In the spoken language the adjective is sometimes intensified by repeating the positive twice, as—

bí ré tinn tinn, he was very sick.

tá ré trom trom, it is very heavy.

lá fhuic fhuic, a very wet day.

**163.** Sometimes *oe* is annexed to the comparative; it is really the prepositional pronoun *oe*, of it.

ní móroe (mó + *oe*) go maḡao. It is not likely that I shall go.

ní mīroe (meapa + *oe*) beic as bpaic oic! It is no harm to be depending on you!

**164.** Although the comparative and the superlative are absolutely alike in form, yet they may be easily distinguished:—

(1) By the context; the comparative can be used only when we are speaking of two persons or things, the superlative is always used for more than two.

(2) By the word *nā* (than) which always follows the comparative, except when *oe* is used; the superlative is never followed by either.

**165.** When comparing adjectives (*i.e.*, giving the three degrees of comparison), it is usual to use *nīor* before the comparative, and *īr* before the superlative, as—

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
bán	nīor báine	īr báine
ḡlar	nīor ḡlaire	īr ḡlaire

Remember that *nīor* and *īr* change their forms according to the tense of the verb in the sentence.

## 168. Irregular Comparison.

## POSITIVE.

## COMPARATIVE.

beas, little or small

luḡa

ḡaṡa, long

ḡuṡe, ḡaṡe, ḡia

mōr, big

mō

oṡc, bad

meaḡa

maṡt, good

ḡeaḡr

ḡeaḡr, short

ḡioḡḡa

bḡeās, \* fine

bḡeāsḡa

mimic, often

mimicī, mionca

te (teit), warm

teō

tirim, dry

tioḡma

ḡurur(Δ) } easy

{ ḡura  
{ ura

ionmum, dear, beloved

ionmume or annḡa

ḡar, near (of place)

ḡoḡe

ḡoḡur, near

{ ḡoiḡre  
{ ḡoiḡḡe

ḡreun, brave, strong

{ ḡréme  
{ ḡreire

ḡrānṡa, ugly

ḡrānṡe

Δro, high

{ Δḡe  
{ Δḡe  
{ Δoiḡe

ionṡa, many

mō or tia (more numerous)

neḡa and tūḡḡe, nearer, sooner, are comparatives which have no positive.

**N.B.**—The superlatives of the above adjectives have exactly the same forms as the comparatives.

\* This word was formerly spelled bḡeāsṡa or bḡeāsḡa, and these forms may be used in the plural.

# 167. Numeral Adjectives.

CARDINALS.	ORDINALS.
1, $\alpha\omicron\nu\ldots\alpha\mu\acute{\alpha}\iota\nu$	1st, $\kappa\epsilon\upsilon\omicron$ ,* $\alpha\omicron\nu\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$
2, $\tau\acute{\omega}\alpha$	2nd, $\tau\omega\rho\alpha$ , $\tau\alpha\rho\iota\alpha$ , $\tau\acute{\omicron}\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$
3, $\tau\rho\acute{\iota}$ ,	3rd, $\tau\rho\acute{\iota}\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$ $\tau\rho\epsilon\alpha\rho$
4, $\kappa\epsilon\iota\tau\epsilon$	4th, $\kappa\epsilon\alpha\tau\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$
5, $\kappa\acute{\upsilon}\varsigma$	5th, $\kappa\acute{\upsilon}\varsigma\epsilon\alpha\omicron$ , $\kappa\acute{\upsilon}\varsigma\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$
6, $\rho\acute{\epsilon}$	6th, $\rho\epsilon\iota\rho\epsilon\alpha\omicron$ , $\rho\acute{\epsilon}\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$
7, $\rho\epsilon\alpha\acute{\sigma}\tau$	7th, $\rho\epsilon\alpha\acute{\sigma}\tau\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$
8, $\omicron\acute{\sigma}\tau$	8th, $\omicron\acute{\sigma}\tau\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$
9, $\nu\alpha\omicron\iota$	9th, $\nu\alpha\omicron\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$
10, $\tau\epsilon\iota\acute{\varsigma}$	10th, $\tau\epsilon\alpha\acute{\sigma}\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$ , $\tau\epsilon\iota\acute{\varsigma}\epsilon\alpha\omicron$
11, $\alpha\omicron\nu$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$	11th, $\alpha\omicron\nu\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$
12, $\tau\acute{\omega}\alpha$ $\tau\acute{\omicron}\epsilon\alpha\varsigma$	12th, $\tau\omega\rho\alpha$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$
13, $\tau\rho\acute{\iota}$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$	13th, $\tau\rho\epsilon\alpha\rho$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$ , $\tau\rho\acute{\iota}\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$
14, $\kappa\epsilon\iota\tau\epsilon$ $\tau\acute{\omicron}\epsilon\alpha\varsigma$	14th, $\kappa\epsilon\alpha\tau\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$
15, $\kappa\acute{\upsilon}\varsigma$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$	15th, $\kappa\acute{\upsilon}\varsigma\epsilon\alpha\omicron$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$
16, $\rho\acute{\epsilon}$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$	16th, $\rho\epsilon\iota\rho\epsilon\alpha\omicron$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$
17, $\rho\epsilon\alpha\acute{\sigma}\tau$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$	17th, $\rho\epsilon\alpha\acute{\sigma}\tau\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$
18, $\omicron\acute{\sigma}\tau$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$	18th, $\omicron\acute{\sigma}\tau\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$
19, $\nu\alpha\omicron\iota$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$	19th, $\nu\alpha\omicron\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$ $\tau\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$
20, $\pi\acute{\iota}\varsigma\epsilon$	20th, $\pi\acute{\iota}\varsigma\epsilon\alpha\omicron$
21, $\alpha\omicron\nu$ $\iota\rho$ (or $\alpha\rho$ ) $\pi\acute{\iota}\varsigma\epsilon$ ; $\alpha\omicron\nu$ $\alpha\rho$ $\pi\acute{\iota}\varsigma\iota\omicron$	21st, $\alpha\omicron\nu\mu\acute{\alpha}\omicron$ $\alpha\rho$ $\pi\acute{\iota}\varsigma\iota\omicron$

---

\* The c of  $\kappa\epsilon\upsilon\omicron$  is usually aspirated after the article.



## CARDINALS.

## ORDINALS.

91, $\Delta$ on $\partial$ eus $\eta$ ceitpe $\pi$ ic $\partial$	91st, $\Delta$ onm $\Delta$ o $\partial$ eus $\Delta$ $\eta$ ceitpe $\pi$ ic $\partial$
100, cé $\Delta$ o (ceuo)	100th, ceuo $\Delta$ o
101, $\Delta$ on $\eta$ ceuo	101st, $\Delta$ onm $\Delta$ o $\Delta$ $\eta$ ceuo
200, o $\Delta$ á ceuo	200th, o $\Delta$ á ceuo $\Delta$ o
300, t $\pi$ í ceuo	300th, t $\pi$ í ceuo $\Delta$ o
400, ceitpe ceuo	400th, ceitpe ceuo $\Delta$ o
800, o $\partial$ t s $\partial$ ceuo	800th, o $\partial$ t s $\partial$ ceuo $\Delta$ o
1000, m $\partial$ ile	1000th, m $\partial$ ile $\Delta$ o
2000, o $\Delta$ á m $\partial$ ile	2000th, o $\Delta$ á m $\partial$ ile $\Delta$ o
3000, t $\pi$ í m $\partial$ ile	3000th, t $\pi$ í m $\partial$ ile $\Delta$ o
4000, ceitpe m $\partial$ ile	4000th, ceitpe m $\partial$ ile $\Delta$ o
1,000,000, milli $\partial$ in	1,000,000th, milli $\partial$ ina $\partial$

## Notes on the Numerals.

**168.** There is another very idiomatic way of expressing the numbers above twenty-one, viz., by placing the word  $\pi$ ice $\Delta$ o alone after the first numeral:— $\partial$ eic $\partial$   $\pi$ ice $\Delta$ o, 30:  $\pi$ ice $\Delta$ o is really the genitive of  $\pi$ ice, so that the literal meaning of  $\partial$ eic $\partial$   $\pi$ ice $\Delta$ o is ten of twenty;  $\partial$ eic $\partial$  s $\partial$ capall  $\pi$ ice $\Delta$ o, 30 horses;  $\pi$ ea $\partial$ t m $\partial$ a  $\pi$ ice $\Delta$ o, 27 cows.

**169.** Whenever any numeral less than twenty is used by itself (*i.e.*, not followed immediately by a noun), the particle  $\Delta^*$  must be used before it. This  $\Delta$  prefixes *n-* to vowels:— $\Delta$  *n*- $\Delta$ on, one;  $\Delta$  o $\partial$ , two;  $\Delta$  *n*-o $\partial$ t, eight.

$\partial$ á  $\pi$ e  $\Delta$  cea $\partial$ ain  $\Delta$  clo $\partial$ s, it is four o'clock.

$\partial$ á  $\pi$ e tea $\partial$ -ua $\eta$  o'ér  $\Delta$  o $\partial$ , it is half past two.

---

\* In Ulster and Munster the article  $\Delta$ n is used instead of this  $\Delta$ .



170. Very frequently in modern times the particle  $\Delta\tau$  (=  $\Delta\zeta\upsilon\tau$ ) is used instead of  $\iota\tau$  in numbers.  $\Delta\tau$  in numbers is pronounced iss.

171.  $\Delta\ \tau\acute{o}$  and  $\Delta\ ce\acute{\alpha}\tau\acute{\alpha}\iota\tau$  can be used only in the absence of nouns. If the nouns be expressed immediately after "two" and "four,"  $\tau\acute{o}\Delta$  and  $ce\iota\tau\epsilon$  must be used.

172.  $\Delta on$ , one, when used with a noun almost always takes the word  $\Delta\mu\acute{\alpha}\iota n$  after the noun; as,  $\Delta on\ \tau\epsilon\acute{\alpha}\rho\ \Delta\mu\acute{\alpha}\iota n$ , one man.  $\Delta on$  by itself usually means "any;" as,  $\Delta on\ \tau\epsilon\acute{\alpha}\rho$ , any man;  $\Delta on\ \iota\acute{\alpha}$ , any day. Sometimes  $\Delta on$  is omitted and  $\Delta\mu\acute{\alpha}\iota n$  only is used, as  $\iota\acute{\alpha}\ \Delta\mu\acute{\alpha}\iota n$ , one day.

173. Under the heading "Ordinals" two forms will be found for nearly all the smaller numbers. *The forms given first are the ones generally used.* As the secondary forms are often met with in books, they are given for the sake of reference.  $C\acute{\epsilon}\Delta\tau\omicron$ , first, is used by itself, but  $\Delta on\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\omicron$  is used in compound numbers, such as 21st, 31st, &c.

First, as an adverb, is  $\Delta\tau\ \tau\omicron\text{-}\tau\acute{\upsilon}\tau\epsilon\tau$  or  $\Delta\tau\ \tau\omicron\text{-}\tau\acute{\upsilon}\tau\epsilon\tau$ , never,  $ce\upsilon\tau\omicron$ .

174. The  $\tau\omicron$  of  $\tau\acute{o}\Delta$ , two is always aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters,  $\tau\omicron$ ,  $n$ ,  $\tau$ ,  $\iota$ ,  $\rho$ , or after the possessive adjective  $\Delta$ , her.

The words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, given in brackets, are the old words for these numbers; they are not used now, and are given simply for reference.

175. *πίce*, *ceυo*, and *mīle*, together with the old words for 30, 40, 50, &c., are really nouns\* and can be declined.

Nom. <i>πίce</i>	gen. <i>πίceαo</i>	dat. <i>πίciο</i>	pl. <i>πίciο</i>
„ <i>ceυo</i>	„ <i>céio</i>	„ <i>ceυo</i>	„ <i>ceυoτα</i>
„ <i>mīle</i>	„ <i>mīle</i>	„ <i>mīle</i>	„ <i>mīlte</i>

The other words are 5th declension, and form their genitive by adding *ο*.

176. *mīle*, a thousand, or a mile, and *ceυo*, a hundred never change their forms after a numeral; *naoi mīle*, 9,000, or 9 miles.

### The Personal Numerals.

177. The following numeral nouns are used especially of persons. All, with the exception of *οίρ* and *βεipτ*, are compounds of the word *פעar*, a man (the *פ* of which has disappeared owing to aspiration), and the numeral adjectives.

<i>אonאr†</i> ( <i>אon-פעar</i> )	one person
[ <i>οίρ</i> ( <i>οίαρ</i> )]	a pair, a couple
<i>βεipτ</i>	two persons, a couple‡
<i>τpíυr</i> (or <i>τpíαρ</i> ) ( <i>τpí-פעar</i> )	three persons
<i>ceατpαρ</i> ( <i>ceαταρ-פעar</i> )	four persons
<i>cúγeαρ</i>	five persons
<i>peipeαρ</i>	six persons

---

\* See Syntax, par. 511 and 512.

† Used in the idiomatic expression for “alone.” See par. 654.

‡ *τánaμα*, a married couple.

mór- <i>feir</i> ear }	seven persons
reac̃tar }	
õctar	eight persons
naonb̃ar or nónb̃ar	nine persons
deic̃neab̃ar	ten persons
dãreus (dã- <i>feir</i> - <i>deus</i> )	twelve persons

**N.B.**—The singular form of the article is used before these numerals; as *an cúigear fear*, the five men.

### The Possessive Adjectives.

178. The term “possessive pronouns” has been incorrectly applied by many grammarians to the “possessive adjectives.” A pronoun is a word that can stand for a noun and be separated from the noun, as the words “mine” and “his” in the sentences, “This book is mine,” “This cap is his.” If I wish to say in Irish, “Did you see his father and mine?” I say, “*An b̃facaib̃ a d̃taib̃ agur m’ d̃taib̃*” (not *agur mo*). The possessive adjectives in Irish can never stand alone; hence they are not pronouns.

179. The possessive adjectives are as follows:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mo, my	ár, our
do, thy	b̃ur (or b̃ar), your
a, his or her	a, their

180. *a*, his; *a*, her; and *a*, their, are very easily distinguished by their initial effects on the following word.

181. The *o* of *mo* and *ʋo* is elided whenever they are followed by a word beginning with a vowel or *ʃ*, as *m' ʃuinneós*, my window; *ʋ' áčair*, thy father.

182. Before a vowel *ʋo*, thy, is very often written *τ* or *č*, as *ʋ' áčair*, *τ' áčair*, *č' áčair*, thy father; even *h-áčair* is sometimes wrongly written.

183. The possessive adjectives may take an emphatic increase, but this emphatic particle always follows the noun, and is usually joined to it by a hyphen; and should the noun be followed by one or more adjectives which qualify it, the emphatic particle is attached to the last qualifying adjective.

### The Emphatic Particles.

184. The emphatic particles can be used with (1) the possessive adjectives, (2) the personal pronouns, (3) the prepositional pronouns, and (4) the synthetic forms of the verbs. Excepting the first person plural all the particles have two forms. When the word to which they are attached ends in a *broad* vowel or consonant use the broad particles, otherwise employ the slender.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	-ra, -re	-ne
2.	-ra, -re	-ra, -re
3.	{ Masc., -ran, -rean Fem., -re, -ri	-ran, -rean

### Examples.

mo.čeač-*pa*, *my* house ; a čeač-*pa*n, *his* house ; a*p*  
 oteač-*ne*, *our* house : m*pe*, myself ; p*re*pa*n*, himself ;  
 aca-*pa*n, at themselves ; bua*ti*m-*pe*, *I* strike.

185. The word *péin* may also be used (generally as a distinct word) to mark emphasis, either by itself or in conjunction with the emphatic particles : as

mo čeač *péin*, my own house

mo čeač-*pa* *péin*, even *my* house

mo čeač b*pe*á*g* m*ó*p-*pa*, my fine large house

mo čeač *péin* and mo čeač-*pa* may both mean “my house,” but the latter is used when we wish to distinguish our own property from that of another person; as, your house and mine, o čeač-*pa* a*g*u*p* mo čeač-*pa*.

186. The possessive adjectives are frequently compounded with the following prepositions :—

i, in (ann), in ; te, with ; to, to ; ó, from ; and p*a*, under.

#### SINGULAR.

#### PLURAL.

i, in or ann, in.

im, am 'mo, in my

ná*p*, iná*p*, i n-á*p*, in our

to, a*o*, 'to, in thy, in your

n*bu*p, i n*bu*p, in your

'na, i n-a, in*a*, in his, in her

na, i n-a, in*a*, in their

In the third person singular and plural iona, ionna, anna are also found written.

187.

te, with.

tem, te mo,* with my	te n-ár, with our
teo, te to,* with thy or your	te nbur, with your
te n-a, with his or her	te n-a, with their

188.

to, to.

tom', to mo,* to my	tar, to our
too', to to,* to thy or your	to bur, tá bur, to your
tá, to his or her	tá, to their

189.

o, from.

óm, o mo,* from my	o n-ár, from our
oo, o to,* from thy or your	o nbur, from your
o n-a, from his or her	o n-a, from their

190.

fá or fó, under.

fám, fóm, under my	fá n-ár, fó n-ár, under our
fáo, fóo, under thy, your	fá nbur, fó nbur, under your
fá n-a, fó n-a, under his, her	fá n-a, fó n-a, under their

191. The following compounds are frequently used with verbal nouns:—

as, at.

asom, as mo,* at my	'sar, sar, as ár, at our
asoo, as to,* at thy, your	as bur, at your
asá, 'sá, sar, at his, her	asá, 'sá, or sar, at their

---

\* The forms marked with an asterisk are used in the North.



**192.** When “you” and “your” refer to one person, the singular words  $\tau\acute{u}$  and  $\tau\acute{o}$  are used in Irish,  $\tau\acute{o}'\Delta\tau\alpha\iota\tau$ , your father (when speaking to one person),  $\tau\acute{o}\tau\iota\tau$  n- $\Delta\tau\alpha\iota\tau$ , your father (when speaking to more than one.)

**193.** Those of the above combinations which are alike in form are distinguished by the initial effect they cause in the following word; as,  $\acute{o}$  n- $\Delta$   $\tau\acute{u}\xi$ , from his house;  $\acute{o}$  n- $\Delta$   $\tau\acute{u}\xi$ , from her house;  $\acute{o}$  n- $\Delta$   $\tau\acute{o}\tau\iota\xi$ , from their house.

**194.** The above combinations may take the same emphatic increase as the uncompound possessive adjectives;  $\acute{o}\mu$   $\tau\acute{u}\xi$   $\acute{p}\acute{e}\iota\mu$ , from my own house;  $\acute{o}\mu$   $\tau\acute{u}\xi$   $\tau\acute{u}\acute{p}\acute{e}\acute{\alpha}\xi$   $\acute{m}\acute{o}\tau\iota$ - $\acute{r}\Delta$ , from my fine large house.

### Demonstrative Adjectives.

**195.** The demonstrative adjectives are  $\tau\acute{o}$ ,\* this;  $\tau\acute{u}\iota$ ,† that; and  $\acute{u}\tau\acute{o}$ , that or yonder.

$\tau\acute{o}$  is frequently written  $\tau\acute{e}\acute{o}$  when the vowel or consonant preceding it is slender.

These words come after the nouns they qualify, and should the noun be followed by any qualifying adjectives,  $\tau\acute{o}$ ,  $\tau\acute{u}\iota$  or  $\acute{u}\tau\acute{o}$  comes after the last qualifying adjective.

It is not enough to say  $\acute{r}\acute{e}\acute{\alpha}\tau\iota$   $\tau\acute{o}$  or  $\acute{b}\acute{e}\acute{\alpha}\tau\iota$   $\tau\acute{u}\iota$  for “this man” or “that woman.” The noun must

\* Also  $\acute{r}\Delta$ ,  $\tau\acute{e}\acute{o}$ , or  $\tau\acute{e}$ .

† Also  $\tau\acute{o}\iota\iota$ ,  $\tau\acute{u}\iota\iota$  or  $\tau\acute{u}\iota$ .

always be preceded by the article. "This man" is *an fear ro*; "these men," *na fir reo*; *an bean ro*, this woman; *an bean rin*, that woman.

196. The word *úo* is used when a person or thing is connected in some way with the person to whom you speak or write; *an fear úo*, that man (whom you have seen or heard of); *an oíche úo*, that particular night which you remember; or in pointing out an object at some distance, as—

*An bpreiceann tú an báo úo?* Do you see that boat?

Also with the vocative case, as—

*A étoiginn úo tálú acá gan teangair.*

Thou skull over there that art without tongue.

### Indefinite Adjectives.

197. The chief indefinite adjectives are—*aon*, any; *éigin*, some, certain; *eite*, other; *uite* (*after* the noun), all, whole; and the phrase *ar bít*, any at all; *pé*, whatever.

*e.g.*, *aon lá*, any day; *aon éapall*, any horse; *an tír uite*, the whole country; *tuine éigin*, a certain person; *an fear eite*, the other man. *An bpraca tú an leabhar i n-áit ar bít?* Did you see the book anywhere? *Ní fuil airgead ar bít agam*, I have no money at all. *Bíteamaic tob' ead an Síogaidhe*, *pé uairteacht ro bí aige nó ná raib.* The Siogaidhe was a rascal, whatever nobility he had or hadn't.

198. The following words are *nouns*, and are fol-

lowed by a genitive or *ve* with the dative. As they are employed to translate English indefinite adjectives, we give them here:—

mórán, much	ḃruit mórán fíona aḡat, Have you much wine?
(an) iomaḃ, a great deal, a great many	an iomaḃ aḡḡio, a great deal of money
beaḡán, little	beaḡán aḡáin, a little bread
(an) iomaḡca, too much	an iomaḡca uirḡe, too much water
an-cuir, rather much	an-cuir ḡalaínn, rather much salt
ḡóḡain, } ḡáit, } enough, sufficient	ḡá mo ḡóḡain aḡáin aḡam, I have sufficient bread
oirḡaḃ (aḡur), as much (as), so much (as) }	an oirḡaḃ ḡin óir, so much gold
cuilleaḃ, more	cuilleaḃ aḡáin, more bread
neaḡt, plenty, abundance	neaḡt aḡḡio, plenty of money
cuir, ḡoinn or ḡoinnt, a share, some	cuir, ḡoinn or ḡoinnt óir, some gold
a lán, many, numerous	ḡá a lán ḡear mbḡeáḡ i n-Éirínn. There are many fine men in Ireland

### 199. Translation of the word "Some."

(a) As has been said, *cuir*, *ḡoinn* or *ḡoinnt* is used to translate the word "some," but there are other words used, as *ḃraon*, a drop, used for liquids; *ḡoirnán*

or *toirpín*, a fistfull, used for hay, straw, corn, potatoes, &c.; *grainín*, a grain, used for meal, flour, tea, &c.; *pinginn*, a penny, used for money. All these words take a genitive.

(b) "Some of" followed by a noun is translated by *curo ve* followed by a dative case.

(c) "Some of" followed by a singular pronoun is translated by *curo ve*; when followed by a plural pronoun, by *curo as*.

<i>Tá braon bainne asam,</i>	I have some milk
<i>Tá grainín rúicra aige,</i>	He has some sugar
<i>Curo ve na fearaib,</i>	Some of the men
<i>Tá curo ve rin olc,</i>	Some of that is bad
<i>Tá curo asa ro olc,</i>	Some of these are bad

### Translation of "Any."

200. (a) When "any" is used in connection with objects that are usually counted it is translated by *don* with a singular noun; as *don fear*, any man; *bfuil don éapall asat?* or *bfuil capall ar bít asat?* Have you any horses?

The following phrases followed by a genitive case are used for "any" with objects that are not counted: *don spreim*, for bread, butter, meat, &c.: *don veór*, for liquids; *don grainín*, for tea, sugar, &c.; *bfuil don spreim feola aige?* Has he any meat?

(b) "Any of" followed by a noun is translated by *don ruine ve*, for persons; *don éann ve*, for any kind of countable objects; *don spreim ve*, &c., as

above. *An b'aca tú don tuire oe na fearaib?* Did you see any of the men? &c.

(c) "Any of" followed by a plural pronoun is translated by the phrases given in (b), but the preposition *as* is used instead of *oe*; as—

*Ní fuil don céann aca annsin.* There is not any of them there.

*Ní raib don tuine asainn annro céana.* Not one of us was here before.

### Distributive Adjectives.

201. *ḡac*, each, every, as *ḡac lá*, every day: *uite* (before the noun), every; the definite article, *or ḡac*, must be used with *uite*; as *an uite fear*, every man. *Uí ḡac uite céann aca tinn.* Every one of them was sick.

*ḡac re*, every other, every second; *ḡac re b'ocail*, every second word.

### 202. The Interrogative Adjectives.

*ca* or *cé*, what, as *cé méad.* what amount?  
*i.e.*, how much or how many?

*ca h-áit*, what place? *ca h-ainm atá ort?* What is your name? *ca h-uair*, what hour? when?

In English we say "what a man," "what a start," &c., but in Irish we say "what the man," "what the start," as *cairé an geir do bainnead ré airte!* What a fright he would give her! (lit. he would take out of her).

## CHAPTER IV.

## The Pronoun.

203. In Irish there are **nine classes of Pronouns:—** **Personal, Reflexive, Prepositional, Relative, Demonstrative, Indefinite, Distributive, Interrogative, and Reciprocal** pronouns. There are no Possessive pronouns in Irish.

## 204. Personal Pronouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1st pers.	mé, I	rinn, we
2nd pers.	tú, thou	ríð, you
3rd pers.	{ré, he rí, she	riao, they

Each of the above may take an **emphatic increase**, equivalent to the English suffix *self*.

## 205.

**Emphatic Forms of the Personal Pronouns.**

1st pers.	míre, myself	rinne, ourselves
2nd pers.	túra, thyself	ríðre, yourselves
3rd pers.	{reirean, himself ríre, herself	riao-ran, themselves

206. The word **péin** is added to the personal pronouns to form the **reflexive pronouns**; as **eo buairear mé péin**, I struck myself.



The reflexive pronouns are as follows : —

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mé féin, myself	rinne féin, ourselves
tú féin, thyself	rib féin, yourselves
é féin, himself	
í féin, herself	iad féin, themselves

207. The above are also used as *emphatic pronouns* ; as, Cuadamar a baite, mé féin agur é féin. Both he and I went home.

## 208. The Personal Pronouns have no declension.

It has already been shown that mo, oo, a, etc., which are usually given as the genitive cases of the personal pronouns, are not pronouns, but adjectives ; because they can never be used without a noun.

The compounds of the pronouns with the preposition oo (to) are usually given as the dative cases of the personal pronouns ; but agam, agat, etc., or the compounds with any of the other prepositions in par. 216, are just as much the datives of the personal pronouns as rom, ruit, &c. Hence the *Irish personal pronouns have no declension*.

209. The Personal Pronouns have however *two forms* :—The **conjunctive** and the **disjunctive**. The **conjunctive forms** are used only immediately after a verb as its subject ; in all other positions the **disjunctive forms** must be used. The disjunctive forms are also used after the verb ir



The reason why these forms follow *ir* is that the word immediately after *ir* is *predicate*,\* not *subject*; and it has just been stated that the conjunctive forms can be used only in immediate connection with a verb as its subject.

### Conjunctive Pronouns.

210. *mé, tú, ré, rí, rinn, rib, ríad.*

### Disjunctive Pronouns.

211. *mé, { tú, é, í, { rinn, { rib, íad,*  
*{ tú, { inn, { ib,*

In *mé, tú, tú*, the vowel is often shortened in Munster, when there is no stress or emphasis. It is shortened in *mé, ré, é, ríad* and *íad* in Ulster, when there is no stress.

212. The disjunctive pronouns can be *nominatives* to verbs, but then they will be separated from the verbs: or they may be used in immediate connection with a verb *as its object*.

He is a man, *ir fear é* (nominative).

He was the king, *rob'é an rí é* (both nominatives).

This is smaller than that, *ir tuḡa é reo ná é ríú*  
 (both nominatives).

I did not strike him, *níor buairear é* (accusative).

---

\* This statement will be explained later on. See par 589.

### The Neuter Pronoun *eað*.

213. The pronoun *eað* is most frequently used in replying to a question asked with any part of the verb *ir* followed by an indefinite predicate.\* *Nað breáðs an lá é? Ir eað go deimhin.* Isn't it a fine day? It is indeed. *An Saeranað é? Ní h-eað.* Is he an Englishman? He is not.

This pronoun corresponds very much with the "unchangeable *le*" in French: as, *Etes-vous sage? Oui, je le suis.*

Whenever *ir* in the question is followed by a pronoun, *eað* cannot be used in the reply. *An é Cormac an rí? Ní h-é.* Is Cormac the king? He is not.

*Ir eað* is usually contracted to *'reað* (*shäh*).

214. The phrase *ir eað* (*'reað*) is often used to refer to a clause going before; as, *i gCaṭair na Mart, ir eað, coṁait mé aṛéir.* In Westport, it was, that I slept last night. *Nuair ir mó an anfoṁain (anaṁain), ir eað, ir goipe an cāṁair.* When the distress is greatest, then it is that help is nearest.

215. In Munster when the predicate is an indefinite noun it is usual to turn the whole sentence into an *eað*-phrase; as—It is a fine day. *Lá breáðs, 'reað é.* He is a priest. *Saṣart, 'reað é.* He was a slave. *Ṭaor, tob 'eað é.* Elsewhere these sentences would be, *ir lá breáðs é; ir raṣart é; ba ṭaor é.*

---

\* For "indefinite predicate" refer to par. 585.

**Prepositional Pronouns**  
or  
**Pronominal Prepositions.**

**216.** Fifteen of the simple prepositions combine with the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns ; and to these combinations is given the name of Prepositional Pronouns or Pronominal Prepositions.

All these compounds are very important. As five or six of them occur most frequently these will be given first, and the remainder, if so desired, may be left until the second reading of the book. The important combinations are those of the prepositions,  $\Delta\zeta$ , at ;  $\Delta\eta$ , on ;  $\tau\omicron$ , to ;  $\iota\epsilon$ , with ;  $\delta$ , from ; and  $\epsilon\upsilon\eta$ , towards.

**All the combinations may take an emphatic suffix.**  
One example will be given.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
<b>217.</b>	$\Delta\zeta$ , at or with.	
1st pers.	$\Delta\zeta\alpha\mu$ , at me	$\Delta\zeta\alpha\iota\eta\eta$ , at us
2nd pers.	$\Delta\zeta\alpha\tau$ , $\Delta\zeta\alpha\tau$ , at thee	$\Delta\zeta\alpha\iota\upsilon$ , at you
3rd pers.	$\Delta\iota\zeta\epsilon$ , at him $\Delta\iota\varsigma\iota$ , at her	$\Delta\epsilon\alpha$ , at them

**218.** The combinations of  $\Delta\zeta$  with the emphatic suffixes.

1st pers.	$\Delta\zeta\alpha\mu\pi\alpha$ , at myself	$\Delta\zeta\alpha\iota\eta\eta\epsilon$ , at ourselves
2nd pers.	$\Delta\zeta\alpha\tau\pi\alpha$ , at thyself	$\Delta\zeta\alpha\iota\upsilon\epsilon$ , at yourselves
3rd pers.	$\Delta\iota\zeta\epsilon\pi\alpha\eta$ , at himself $\Delta\iota\varsigma\iota\pi\iota$ , at herself	$\Delta\epsilon\alpha\pi\alpha\eta$ , at themselves

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
219.	ar, on.	
1st pers.	orm, on me	orainn, on us
2nd pers.	ort, on thee	oraib, on you
3rd pers.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} air, \text{ on him} \\ uirru \text{ or uircti, on her} \end{array} \right.$	ortad or ortas, on them

220.	oo, to.	
1st pers.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} oom,* \\ oam, \end{array} \right.$ to me	oúinn, to us
2nd pers.	ouit, to thee	oaoib, oib, to you
3rd pers.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} oo \text{ to him} \\ oi, \text{ to her} \end{array} \right.$	oóib, to them

The initial **o** of these combinations and also those of **oe** are usually aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters **o, n, t, l, r**.

221.	te, with.	
	uom, with me	uinn, with us
	teat, with thee	uib, with you
	teir, with him	
	$\left. \begin{array}{l} téi, \\ téicti, \end{array} \right\} \text{with her}$	teo, with them

222.	o, or ua,† from.	
	uaim, from me	uainn, from us
	uait, „ thee	uaib, „ you
	uaio,† „ him	
	uaicti „ her	uačad, „ them

\* **oam** (= **oom**) is the literary and also the Ulster usage. The emphatic form is **oompa**, never **oompa**, except in Connaught.

† **ua** is never used as a simple preposition.

‡ **uao** and **uaioe** (= **uaio**) are also both literary and spoken forms.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

## 223.                   cun, towards.

cugam, * towards me	cugainn, towards us
cugac, } „ thee	cugaib, „ you
cugao, }	
cuiſe, „ him	cúca, „ them
cui-ci, „ her	

## 224.                   roun, before.

rounam, before me	rounainn, before us
rounac, }	rounaib, „ you
rounao, }	
roune, }	
rounir, }	
rounpi, „ her	rounpa, „ them

## 225.                   ar, out.

aram, out of me	arainn, out of us
arac, }	araib, „ you
arao, }	
ar, „ him	
air-ci, „ her	arta „ them

## 226.                   i, in (or ann) in.

ionnam, in me	ionnainn, in us
ionnac, „ thee	ionnaib „ you
ann, „ him	
inn-ci, „ her	ionnta, „ them

## 227.                   oe, off, from.

oíom, off or from me	oíinn, off or from us
oíot, „ thee	oíb, „ you
oe, „ him	oíob, „ them
oi, „ her	

\* The ɣ in these combinations is aspirated in Munster, except in cuiſe.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

228.             $\rho\acute{\epsilon}$ ,  $\rho\acute{\alpha}$ ,  $\rho\alpha\omicron\iota$ , under.

$\rho\acute{\upsilon}\mu$ , under me	$\rho\acute{\upsilon}\mu\eta\eta$ , under us
$\rho\acute{\upsilon}\tau$ , „ thee	$\rho\acute{\upsilon}\iota\beta$ , „ you
$\rho\alpha\omicron\iota$ , „ him	
$\rho\acute{\upsilon}\iota\tau\iota$ , „ her	$\rho\acute{\upsilon}\tau\alpha$ , „ them

229.             $\iota\omicron\iota\eta$ , between.

$\epsilon\alpha\tau\omicron\mu$ , between me	$\epsilon\alpha\tau\omicron\mu\eta\eta$ , between us
$\epsilon\alpha\tau\omicron\alpha\tau$ , „ thee	$\epsilon\alpha\tau\omicron\alpha\iota\beta$ , „ you
$\iota\omicron\iota\eta \acute{\epsilon}$ , „ him	$\epsilon\alpha\tau\omicron\mu\eta\alpha$ } „ them
$\iota\omicron\iota\eta \iota$ , „ her	(or $\epsilon\alpha\tau\omicron\mu\alpha$ ) }

230.             $\tau\alpha\eta$ , over or beyond.

$\tau\alpha\eta\mu$ or $\tau\omicron\eta\mu$ , over me	$\tau\alpha\eta\mu\eta\eta$ or $\tau\omicron\eta\mu\eta\eta$ , over us
$\tau\alpha\eta\tau$ or $\tau\omicron\eta\tau$ , „ thee	$\tau\alpha\eta\alpha\iota\beta$ „ $\tau\omicron\eta\alpha\iota\beta$ , „ you
$\tau\alpha\eta\mu\eta$ , „ him	$\tau\alpha\eta\eta\alpha$ „ $\tau\alpha\eta\eta\tau\alpha$ , „ them
$\tau\alpha\eta\mu\eta\iota$ or $\tau\alpha\eta\mu\eta\tau\iota$ , „ her	

231.             $\tau\eta\acute{\epsilon}$ , through.

$\tau\eta\acute{\omicron}\mu$ , through me	$\tau\eta\acute{\omicron}\mu\eta\eta$ , through us
$\tau\eta\acute{\omicron}\tau$ , „ thee	$\tau\eta\acute{\omicron}\iota\beta$ , „ you
$\tau\eta\acute{\omicron}$ , „ him	$\tau\eta\acute{\omicron}\tau\alpha$ , „ them
$\tau\eta\acute{\omicron}\iota\tau\iota$ , „ her	

The  $\tau$  of these combinations is often aspirated.

232.             $\upsilon\mu$ , about.

$\upsilon\mu\alpha\mu$ , about me	$\upsilon\mu\alpha\mu\eta\eta$ , about us
$\upsilon\mu\alpha\tau$ , „ thee	$\upsilon\mu\alpha\iota\beta$ , „ you
$\upsilon\mu\epsilon$ , „ him	$\upsilon\mu\eta\alpha$ , „ them
$\upsilon\mu\iota\mu\eta$ , „ her	



## The Relative Pronoun.

In Old Irish there was a relative particle used after prepositions, and also a compound relative, but no simple relative in the nominative and accusative cases. The modern relative, in these cases, has arisen from a mistaken idea about certain particles. Before the imperfect, the past, and conditional the particle *do* should, strictly speaking, be used. Certain irregular but often used verbs had also an unaccented first syllable, as *atá*, *do-beirim*, *do-éim*, &c. These particles and syllables being unaccented were generally dropped at the beginning, but retained in the body, of a sentence, where the relative naturally occurs. Hence they were erroneously regarded as relative pronouns, from analogy with other languages.

In Modern Irish the relative particle may or may not be used in the nominative and accusative cases.

Although this is the origin of the modern relative nevertheless it is used as a *real relative* in modern Irish. Whether we call this  $\Delta$  a relative particle or a relative pronoun is a mere matter of choice. We prefer the first name.

There is a relative frequently met with in authors, viz.—*noč*, meaning *who, which or that*. This relative is not used in modern spoken Irish, in fact it seems never to have been used in the spoken language.

**233.** In modern Irish there are three simple relatives, the relative particles  $\Delta$  and  $\Sigma O$ , which signify *who, which, or that*; and the negative particle  $n\Delta C$ , signifying *who...not, which...not, that...not*.

The relative  $\Sigma O$  is not found in literature, but it is so generally used in the spoken dialect of Munster that it must be regarded as a true relative.  $\Sigma O$  is not used as the subject or object of a *verb*, its use is confined to the *prepositional (dative)* case.

There are also the compound relatives *pé, sibé, cibé, whoever, whosoever, whatever*, and  $\Delta$  (causing eclipsis) *what, that which, all that*.

**234.** The relative particle  $\Delta$  expressed or understood, causes aspiration; but when preceded by a preposition or when it means “all that,” it causes eclipsis, as do  $\Sigma O$  and  $n\Delta C$ .

Δν fear a buailim.	The man whom I strike.
Δν fear a buaileann mé.	The man who strikes me.
Δν buachaill nać mbeirć aς obair.	The boy who will not be at work.
Δν bean go bfuil an bó aici.	The woman who has the cow.
Δ. gcairim fan lá.	All that I spend per day.
Sin a fuib ann.	That's all that was there.
Do rgaric a fuib laicreac.	All who were present burst out laughing.
Δν áic 'na bfuil pé.	The place in which he is.

**235. The relative *a* when governed by a preposition, or when it means "all that," unites with *no*, the particle formerly used before the past tense of regular verbs, and becomes *ar*. This *ar* unites with the prepositions *do* (to) and *le* (with) and becomes *oar* and *ler*.**

Ar cáitear fan lá.	All that I spent per day.
Δν fear oar gcaillar mo leabhar. or	The man to whom I promised my book.
Δν fear ar gcaillar mo leabhar do.	
Δν trlat ler buaileacó é.	The rod with which he was beaten.

**236.** The pronouns *cé* and *pé* unite with *no*, but only with the verb *ir*.

Cé 'r b'í féin?	Who was she?
pé 'r b'é féin?	Whoever he was

**237. Whenever the relative follows a superlative, or any phrase of the nature of a superlative, use *oá* (= *oe* + *a*). Before the past tense of regular verbs *oá* becomes *oar* (= *oá* + *no*)**

Béarfacó tuic gac uile nio oá bfuil agam.

I will give you *everything* that I have.

Ir é rin an fear ir doirde oar buail liom muin.

That is the *tallest* man that I have ever met.

Ni maic leir don nio oá ocusar do.

He does not like a single thing I gave him.

### Demonstrative Pronouns.

**238.** The demonstrative pronouns are *ro* or *reo*, *this*; *rin*, *rain*, *roin*, *ran*, *that*; *riú* or *riúo*, *that (yonder)*. The secondary forms *o* or *eo*, *in*, and *iúo* are very common in colloquial usage in Connaught and Munster.

These secondary forms have sometimes been written *fo*, *fin*, etc.

*Ir píor rin.* That is true.

*'Seadò ran.* The matter is so.

*Tá ré go h-aindeir asat,* You have it in a mess, so  
*tá ran* you have.

*B'in í an áit.* That was the place.

*Deirim-re supb iúo é an* I say that that is the man  
*peap úib.* for you.

*B' in é críoc an rgeit.* That was the end of the

*An in é an borsá?* Is that the box? [affair.

*Ní h-oí an áit.* This is not the place.

*B' in é an buacailt eúige.* That was the boy for it.

**239.** When we are referring to a definite object these pronouns take the form *é reo*, *í reo*, *iao ro*, *é rin*, *í rin*, *iao rain*, etc. This is especially the case when the English words "this," "that," etc., are equivalent to "*this one*," "*that one*," etc.

*Tóg é rin.* Lift (or take) that.

*'Sé reo an peap.* This is the man.

*'Dob' é rin Seagán.* That was John.

*'Sí rin Bpúigro.* That's Brigid.

*Cé h-iao ro?* Who are these?

*An é riúo Tomár.* Is that (person yonder)  
Thomas?

*Ní h-é, 'ré riúo é, or* No; that's he.  
*riúo é é.*

'Sé reo = ir é reo ; 'Sé rin = ir é rin, etc.

In the spoken language the phrases ir é rin é, ir é riúo é, etc, are very frequently contracted to rin é, rin í, riúo é, etc.

Siúo é. That is he.

Siúo é Taðg. Yonder is Thade.

Sin é an capúr. That's the hammer.

The forms riné, riní, rióé, rióí, are also frequently used.

Síóé atá orm. That is what ails me.

Siní an áit. That's the place.

Síóí annró í. Here she is here.

Siní í. That is she (or it).

Síóé é. This is he (or it).

**240.** Súo, yonder, qualifies a pronoun; whilst úo qualifies a noun: as, an fear úo, yonder man; a fear riúo, yonder woman's husband.

### Indefinite Pronouns.

- 241.** The principal indefinite pronouns are—  
 các (gen. cáic), all, everybody, everyone else.  
 uile, all.  
 éinne, éinnead (dom'ne), anybody.

The following are *nouns*, but they are used to translate English indefinite pronouns, hence we give them here :—

duine ar bít, anyone at all.

curo...curo eite, some...others

beagán, a few.

Δη τοῦτῃς εἶννε ἀνθρω? Did anyone come here?

“Ὀὐ ἔ το ὅτῃς ἀν μαρτυρῇ?” ἀρ ἐὰν. “Who is he who drowned the youths?” said all.

Ὀὐ μετῇ ὕβῃς ἀγῶν? (or ἀν ὁμῇ ὕβῃς ἀγῶν?)

Ὀὐ βῆς ἀγῶν. How many apples have you?

I have a few.

Ὀὐ τοῖς. To them all.

Ὀὐ-ἑρῶμεν Ὀὐ ἀν βῆ. We all die.

Ὀὐ ἐκαστῇ το Ὀὐ περὶ ἀμῶν ῥῆς. All these went past like a shadow.

### Distributive Pronouns.

242. The distributive pronouns are:—ἑκαστῇ, each; ἑκαστῇ Ὀὐ, everyone; ἑκαστῇ ἀν, each one, everyone; ἐκαστῇ, either. Ὀὐ is a contraction for ἑκαστῇ Ὀὐ. Ὀὐ ἑκαστῇ ἀν ἀγῶν, I have not either of them.

Ὀὐ ἀν ἑκαστῇ ἀγῶν. Let each one know.

Ὀὐ Ὀὐ (Ὀὐ) ἑκαστῇ Ὀὐ τῇ (ἑκαστῇ) ἑκαστῇ ἀν ἐκαστῇ ἀν. For the anger of God is on each one who violates His law.

N.B.—The tendency in present-day usage is to employ distributive adjectives followed by appropriate nouns rather than distributive pronouns: *e.g.* Everyone went home. Ὀὐ ἐκαστῇ ἑκαστῇ Ὀὐ Ὀὐ ἀν.

## Interrogative Pronouns.

243. The chief interrogative pronouns are:—*cia* or *cé*, who, which; *cao*, *ceuro*, or *caíre*, what; *cé* or *ceuro* (*cia ruo*), what; *cia leir*, whose; *cia aca* (*cioca*), which of them. *cé* (or *cia*) *asab*, which of you.

*Cé rinne é rin?* Who did that?

*Cao atá asat?* What have you?

*Cao é rin asat?* What is that you have?

*Caíre atá ort?*  
*Cao tá ort?* } What ails you?

*Cé aca ir fearr?*  
*Cioca ir fearr?* } Which of them is the better?

*Cia an fear?* Which or what man?

*Cia na fir?* Which men?

*Cia an luach?* What price?

*Caíre an ruo é rin?* What is that?

*Cé leir an leabhar?* Whose is the book?

244. Notice in the last sentence the peculiar position of the words. The interrogative pronoun always comes first in an Irish sentence, even when it is governed by a preposition in English. In Irish we do not say "With whom (is) the book?" but "Who with him (is) the book?"



Further examples of the same construction:—

Cé leir é seo?

Whose is this?

Cé aige an leabhar?

Who has the book?

Δ Seaḡáin, ṽtiocfaib tú go John, will you come  
ḡailim? Cao cúige? to Galway? *What*  
*for?*

Cia leir ḃfuil tú cormail? Whom are you like?

We may also say, Cia ḃfuil tú cormail leir?

Notice that the adjective *cormail*, *like*, takes *le*, *with*; not *do*, *to*.

**245. N.B.**—The interrogative pronouns are always **nominative case** in an Irish sentence. In such a sentence as, *Cia ḃuaiteadair?* Whom did they strike? *cia* is nominative case to *ir* understood, whilst the suppressed relative is the object of *ḃuaiteadair*. In *cia leir*, *cao cúige*, &c., *leir* and *cúige* are prepositional pronouns, not simple prepositions.

### Reciprocal Pronoun.

**246.** The reciprocal pronoun in Irish is *Δ céite*,\* meaning *each other*, *one another*. *Cuir fionn Δ lámh Δ lámh Δ céite*, Finn put their hands in the hands of one another. *Do rḡar Orḡar aḡur Diarmuid le n-Δ céite*. Oscar and Diarmuid separated from each other (lit. “separated with each other”). *ḃuaiteadair Δ céite*. They struck each other.

---

\* Literally, his fellow.

### Phrases containing the Reciprocal Pronoun.

ó céite,\* from each other, separated or asunder.

te céite,† together.

mar a céite, like each other, alike.

trí n-a céite,  
 trí n-a céite, } confused, without any order.

oiréad te céite, each as much as the other.

i n-iair a céite, one after the other, in succession.

ar gac fárad i n-a céite, out of one desert into another

## CHAPTER V.

### THE VERB.

#### Conjugations.

247. In Irish there are two conjugations of regular verbs. They are distinguished by the formation of the future stem. All verbs of the first conjugation form the first person singular of the future simple in -*fao* or -*feao*, whilst verbs of the second conjugation form the same part in -*ócao* or -*eócao*.

\* ó céite, = ó n-a céite.

† te céite, = te n-a céite. This last form is often used and explains the aspiration in te céite

### Forms of Conjugation.

248. Every Irish verb, with the single exception of *ir*, has three forms of conjugation:—The **Synthetic**, the **Analytic**, and the **Autonomous**.

249. The **synthetic, or pronominal form**, is that in which the persons are expressed by means of terminations or inflections. All the persons, singular and plural, with the single exception of the third person singular, have synthetic forms in practically every tense. The third person singular can never have its nominative contained in the verb-ending or termination.

The following example is the present tense synthetic form of the verb *mot*, *praise*:—

#### SINGULAR.

*motaim*, I praise.

*motair*, thou praisest.

*motann sé*, he praises.

#### PLURAL.

*motaimís*, we praise.

*motaoi*, you praise.

*motair*, they praise.

250. In the **analytic form** of conjugation the persons are not expressed by inflection; the form of the verb remains the same throughout the tense and the persons are expressed by the pronouns *placed after the verb*. The form of the verb in the third person singular of the above example is the form the verb has in the analytic form of the present tense.

The analytic form in every tense has identically the same form as the third person singular of that tense.

N.B.—The analytic form is generally employed in asking questions.

The following is the analytic form of the present tense of *mol* :—

## SINGULAR.

*molaim*, I praise.

*molann tú*, thou praisest.

*molann sé*, he praises.

## PLURAL.

*molann sinn*, we praise.

*molann sib*, you praise.

*molann siad*, they praise

The analytic form is used in all the tenses, but in some of the tenses it is rarely, if ever, found in some of the persons: for instance, it is not found in the first person singular above. As the analytic form presents no difficulty, it will not be given in the regular table of conjugations.

251. We are indebted to the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for the following explanation of the **Autonomous Form** of conjugation :—

“This third form—*the Autonomous*—has every one of the moods and tenses, but in each tense it *has only one person*, and that person is only *implied*. It is really a personality, but it is not a specific personality. It is only a general, undefined personality.

“This third form of an Irish verb has some very unique powers. . . . I shall illustrate one. An English verb cannot of itself make complete sense alone; this form of an Irish verb can. For instance, ‘*Buailtear*’ is a complete sentence. It means, ‘A beating is being administered,’ or, ‘Somebody is striking.’ Irish grammarians have imagined that this

form of the verb is passive voice. No, it is not passive voice, for it has a passive of its own; and, again, all intransitive verbs (even the verb τᾶ) possesses this form of conjugation. The nearest equivalents in sense and use to this Irish form are the German ‘mann’ and the French ‘on’ with the third person singular of the verb.”—*Gaelic Journal*.

The usual translation of the French phrase “on dit” is, “It is said.” “Is said” is certainly passive voice in English, but it does not follow that “dit” is passive voice in French. The same remark holds with regard to the Irish phrase “buaitear an gach,” which is usually translated, “The dog is struck.” Buaitear is not passive voice; it is *active voice, autonomous form*, and gach is its object in the *accusative case*. The literal translation of the phrase is, “Somebody strikes the dog.” The passive voice of buaitear, *someone strikes*, is tátar buaite, *someone is struck*.

252. As this is the first grammar that has adopted the term “*Autonomous form of the Verb*,” we think it advisable to state that the form of the verb which we give as the *Autonomous form* is given in other Irish grammars as the *passive voice*. A fuller treatment of the Autonomous Verb will be found at the end of the book, where we endeavour to show that in *modern* Irish, at least, this form of the verb is *active voice*. The name by which this form of the verb ought to be called is not merely a matter of terms, for on it de-

pends the case of the following noun or pronoun : *i.e.*, whether such noun or pronoun is the *subject* or *object* of the verb.

As *all* Irish scholars have not accepted the *Autonomous form* of the verb, since it appears that formerly, at least, the verb was not Autonomous, being inflected for the plural number, it has been suggested that both names be retained for the present. In the first edition of this grammar the term "*Indefinite*" was given to this form, but as the name "*Autonomous*," which means *possessing the power of self government*, is far more expressive, it has been adopted instead of "*Indefinite*."

As the Autonomous form has only one inflection for each tense, this inflection is given immediately after each tense in the tables of conjugation.

## MOODS AND TENSES.

**253.** Verbs have three moods, the **Imperative**, the **Indicative**, and the **Subjunctive**.

Some grammars add a fourth mood, the Conditional; and some omit the Subjunctive. The Conditional form, however, is always either Indicative or Subjunctive in meaning, and is here classed as a tense under the Indicative Mood.

The **Imperative** has only one tense, the Present. Its use corresponds to that of the Imperative in English.

The **Indicative Mood** has five tenses, the Present, the Imperfect, the Past, the Future, and the Conditional.



The **Present Tense** corresponds to the English Present, and like it usually denotes *habitual action*.

The so-called Consuetudinal or Habitual Present—*i.e.*, the third person singular ending in -ann—in no way differs from the other parts of the Present in regard to time. The verb bí, however, has a distinct Present, bím, denoting habitual action. In English the Present—*e.g.*, *I write*—generally denotes habitual action. *Present action* is usually signified by a compound tense, *I am writing*. So in Irish the Present, ṙṡṙíobḁam, denotes *habitual action*, and present action is denoted by the compound tense, ṙám aṡ ṙṡṙíobḁó. However, as in English, the Present Tense of certain verbs, especially those relating to the *senses* or the *mind*, denote *present* as well as *habitual action*—*e.g.*, cluimim, *I hear*; cṙerom, *I believe*.

The **Imperfect Tense** is also called the *Habitual* or *Consuetudinal Past*. It denotes habitual action in past time; as, ṙo ṙṡṙíobḁann, *I used to write*.

The **Past Tense** is also called the *Perfect* and the *Preterite*. It corresponds to the Past Tense in English; as, ṙo ṙṡṙíobḁar, *I wrote*.

Continuous action in past time is denoted by a compound tense, as in English—*e.g.*, ṙo bíor aṡ ṙṡṙíobḁó, *I was writing*.

The **Future Tense** corresponds to the Future in English: as ṙṡṙíobḁao, *I shall write*.

The **Conditional** corresponds to the Compound Tense with “*should*” or “*would*” in English: as ṙo ṙṡṙíobḁá, *thou wouldst write*.

The Conditional is also called the **Secondary Future**, because it denotes a future act regarded in the past: as, aṙoubairṙ ré ṡo ṙṡṙíobḁó ré. He said that he would write.

In the **Subjunctive Mood** there are only two Tenses, the Present and the Past. This mood is used principally to express a wish, and also after certain conjunctions. See par. 550, &c.

### Active Voice, Ordinary Form.

**254.** Each Tense has the following forms:—

1. The action is merely stated, as—

buaitéann Seagán an clár,  
John strikes the table.

2. The action is represented as in progress, as—

Tá Seagán ag buailt̃ an clár,  
John is striking the table.

3. The action as represented as about to happen—

Tá Seagán { cum } an clár ro buailt̃,  
                  { ar tí }  
John is about (is going) to strike the table.

4. The action is represented as completed, as—

Tá Seagán d'éir an clár ro buailt̃,  
John has just struck the table.

### Active Voice, Autonomous Form.

**255.** Each Tense has the following forms, corresponding exactly to those given in the preceding paragraph.

1. buaitear an clár,

Someone strikes the table.

2.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho \alpha\varsigma \beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\omicron \alpha\eta \epsilon\lambda\acute{\alpha}\rho,$   
Someone is striking the table.
3.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho \left\{ \begin{array}{c} \epsilon\upsilon\mu \\ \alpha\eta \tau\acute{\iota} \end{array} \right\} \alpha\eta \epsilon\lambda\acute{\alpha}\rho \tau\omicron \omicron \beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\omicron,$   
Someone is about to strike the table.
4.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho \tau'\epsilon\iota\rho \alpha\eta \epsilon\lambda\acute{\alpha}\rho \tau\omicron \omicron \beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\omicron,$   
Someone has just struck the table.

### 256. Passive Voice, Ordinary Form.

1. (This form is supplied by the Autonomous Active.)
2.  $\tau\acute{\alpha} \alpha\eta \epsilon\lambda\acute{\alpha}\rho \tau\acute{\alpha}$  (or  $\xi\acute{\alpha}$ )  $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\omicron,$   
The table is being struck.
3.  $\tau\acute{\alpha} \alpha\eta \epsilon\lambda\acute{\alpha}\rho \left\{ \begin{array}{c} \epsilon\upsilon\mu \\ \alpha\eta \tau\acute{\iota} \end{array} \right\} \alpha \beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\iota\tau\epsilon,$   
The table is about to be struck.
4.  $\tau\acute{\alpha} \alpha\eta \epsilon\lambda\acute{\alpha}\rho \beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\iota\tau\epsilon,$   
The table has (just) been struck.

### 257. Passive Voice, Autonomous Form.

1.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho \beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\iota\tau\epsilon,$   
Someone is struck.
2.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho \rho\acute{\epsilon} \beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\omicron.$   
Someone is being struck.
3.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho \left\{ \begin{array}{c} \epsilon\upsilon\mu \\ \alpha\eta \tau\acute{\iota} \end{array} \right\} \beta\epsilon\iota\tau \beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\iota\tau\epsilon,$   
Someone is about to be struck
4.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho \beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\iota\tau\epsilon,$   
Someone has (just) been struck

**258. The Principal Parts of an Irish Verb are—**

(1) The 2nd sing. of the Imperative Mood.

(2) The 1st sing. of the Future Simple.

(3) The Past Participle (also called the Verbal Adjective).

(4) The Verbal Noun.

(a) The **Imperative 2nd. pers. sing.** gives the stem of the verb from which most of the other tenses and persons are formed.

(b) The **Future** tells to what conjugation (first or second) the verb belongs, and gives the stem for the Conditional.

(c) The **Past Participle** shows whether  $\tau$  is aspirated or unaspirated in the following persons, which are formed from the past participle—*i.e.*:

Present, *2nd plural.*

Imperfect, *2nd singular.*

**Autonomous.**

*Imperative, Present, and Imperfect.*

Verbal noun.

*Gen. sing. and nom. plural.*

(d) With the **Verbal Noun** are formed the compound tenses.

The four following types include all verbs belonging to the first conjugation:—

### 259. Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	P. Participle.	Verbal Noun.	Meaning.
1.	mol	molpao	molta	molao	praise
2.	peub	peubpao	peubta	peubao	burst or tear
3.	buail	buailpao	buailta	buaiao	strike
4.	foir	foirpao	foirte	foiritin	help, succour

**N.B.**—No notice need be taken of the variation in form of verbal nouns, as they cannot be reduced to any rule, but must be learned for each verb. The ending *ao* or *eo* is that most frequently found, but there are numerous other endings. (See pars. 315 and 316).

**260.** (1) and (2) are the types for all verbs of the first conjugation whose stem ends in a broad consonant; whilst (3) and (4) are the types for the verbs of the same conjugation whose stem ends in a slender consonant.

As the conjugations of types (2) and (4) are identical with those of types (1) and (3) respectively, except the aspiration of the *τ* in the endings mentioned in par. 258 (c), we do not think it necessary to conjugate in full the four types. We shall give the forms in modern use of the verbs *mol* and *buail*, and then give a rule which regulates the aspiration of *τ* in the Past Participle. (See par. 282).

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

In the following table the forms marked with an asterisk are not generally used in the analytic form. The forms in square brackets were used in early modern Irish, and are frequently met with in books. Alternative terminations are given in round brackets.

## 261. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

## SINGULAR.

1st. ———

2nd. *mol*, praise thou*buaíl*, strike thou3rd. *molaid ré*, let him praise*buailead ré*

## PLURAL.

1. { *molaimís* (-*amuir*) } let us { *buaílímís* (*eamuir*)  
 { *molam* } praise { *buaileam*

2. *molaid*, praise (you)*buaílid*

3. { *molaidís*,  
 { *molaidaois*, let them praise *buaílidís*

## Autonomous.

*moltar**buailtetar*

The negative particle for this mood is *ná*.

## 262. INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present Tense.

SING. 1. \**molam*, I praise\**buaílím*, I strike2. *molair*, &c.*buaílir*3. *molanna<sup>a</sup> ré**buaileanna<sup>c</sup> ré*PLUR. 1. *molaimís* (*amuir*)*buaílímís* (-*imís*)2. *molann rí<sup>b</sup>**buaileann rí<sup>d</sup>*3. *molair**buaílir**a*[*molaid*]*b*[*molaidois*]*c*[*buaílir*]*d*[*buaileir*]



<b>Autonomous.</b>	<i>Moltaṛ</i>	<i>buaiteaṛ</i>
<b>Relative form.</b>	<i>ṁoltaṛ</i>	<i>buaiteaṛ</i>
<b>Negative.</b>	<i>Ní ṁoltaim,</i>	<i>I do not praise.</i>
„	<i>Ní buaitiṛ,</i>	<i>You do not strike.</i>
<b>Interrogative.</b>	<i>An moltaṁ ré?</i>	<i>Does he praise?</i>
„	<i>An mbuaitim?</i>	<i>Do I strike?</i>
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b>	<i>Nac moltaṛ?</i>	<i>Do they not praise?</i>
„	<i>Nac mbuaiteann ré?</i>	<i>Does he not strike?</i>

### 263. Imperfect Tense.

<b>SING.</b>	1. * <i>ṁoltaṁn</i> , I used to praise	* <i>buaitinṁ</i>
	2. * <i>moltaḍ</i> , &c.	* <i>buaiteḍ</i>
	3. <i>molatṛ ré</i>	<i>buaiteatṛ ré</i>
<b>PLUR.</b>	1. <i>ṁoltaimṛ (-amuṛ)</i>	<i>buaitimṛ (or imṛ)</i>
	2. <i>molatṛ pib</i>	<i>buaiteatṛ pib</i>
	3. { <i>ṁoltaṛoṛ</i> <i>ṁoltaṛaoṛ</i>	<i>buaitioṛ</i>
<b>Autonomous.</b>	<i>Moltaḍoi,</i>	<i>Buaiteí.</i>
<b>Negative.</b>	<i>Ní ṁoltaṁn,</i>	<i>I used not praise.</i>
„	<i>Ní buaiteatṛ ré,</i>	<i>He used not strike.</i>
<b>Interrogative.</b>	<i>An moltaḍ?</i>	<i>Used you praise?</i>
„	<i>An mbuaitioṛ?</i>	<i>Used they strike?</i>
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b>	<i>Nac moltaṁn?</i>	<i>Used I not praise?</i>
„	<i>Nac mbuaitinṁ?</i>	<i>Used I not strike?</i>

### 264. Past Tense.

<b>SING.</b>	1. <i>molatṛ</i> , I praised	<i>buaiteaṛ</i>
	2. <i>molaiṛ</i>	<i>buaitiṛ</i>
	3. <i>mol ré</i>	<i>buaite ré</i>

PLUR. 1. mótamap	buaitéamap
2. mótadbap	buaitéadbap
3. mótadobap	buaitéadobap
Autonomous. Mótad	buaitéad
Negative. níor mótap,	I did not praise.
„ níor buait ré,	He did not strike.
Interrogative. An mótaip?	Did you praise?
„ An buaitéap?	Did I strike?
Neg. Interrog. Nár mót ré?	Did he not praise?
„ Nár buaitéamap?	Did we not strike?

## 265.

## Future Tense.

SING. 1. mótfao, I shall praise	buaitfeao
2. mótfaip, thou wilt praise	buaitfip
3. mótfaid ré, &c.	buaitfid ré
PLUR. 1. mótfaimid <sup>a</sup> (-amuid)	buaitfimid (imuid)
2. mótfaid rib <sup>a</sup>	buaitfid rib <sup>b</sup>
3. mótfaid	buaitfid
Relative form. mótfap	buaitfeap
Autonomous. Mótfap <sup>c</sup>	buaitfeap <sup>d</sup>
Negative. ní mótfao,	I shall not praise.
„ ní buaitfid ré,	He will not strike.
Interrogative. An mótfaid ré?	Will he praise?
„ An mbuaitfeao?	Shall I strike?
Neg. Interrog. Nac mótfap?	Will you not praise?
„ Nac mbuaitfid?	Will they not strike?

<sup>a</sup>[mótfaíci]<sup>c</sup>[mótfaídeap]<sup>b</sup>[buaitfíci]<sup>d</sup>[buaitfídeap]

## 266. Conditional or Secondary Future.

SING. 1.	mōtfaɪnn, I would praise	buaɪtfaɪnn
2.	mōtfa	buaɪtfa
3.	mōtfað ré	buaɪtfað ré
PLUR. 1.	mōtfaɪmír (faɪmɪr)	buaɪtfaɪmír (faɪmɪr)
2.	mōtfað rɪð	buaɪtfað rɪð
3.	{ mōtfaɪtɔɪr mōtfaðatɔɪr	buaɪtfaɪtɔɪr
Autonomous.	mōtfaɪ	buaɪtfaɪ
Negative.	Ni mōtfaɪnn,	I would not praise.
„	Ni buaɪtfa,	You would not strike
Interrogative.	An mōtfa,	Would you praise?
„	An mbuaɪtfað ré,	Would he strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Nac mōtfað ré?	Would he not praise?
„	Nac mbuaɪtfaɪmír?	Would we not strike?

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

### 267. Present Tense.

SING. 1.	mōtaɔ	buaɪtaɔ
2.	mōtaɪr	buaɪtaɪr
3.	mōtaɪrɔ ré	buaɪtaɪrɔ ré
PLUR. 1.	mōtaɪmɪtɔ (-amɪtɔ)	buaɪtaɪmɪtɔ (-ɪmɪtɔ)
2.	mōtaɪrɔ rɪð <sup>a</sup>	buaɪtaɪrɔ rɪð <sup>b</sup>
3.	mōtaɪtɔ	buaɪtaɪtɔ
Autonomous.	mōtcaɪr	buaɪtcaɪr

The negative particle is nár, which always aspirates when possible.

268.

## Past Tense.

SING. 1. molaimn	buaillinn
2. molta	buaillteá
3. molað ré	buaileað ré
PLUR. 1. molaimí (aimí)	buaillimí (-imí)
2. molað ríð	buaileað ríð
3. { molaíóir molaíóir	buaillíóir
Autonomous. moltaí	buaillte
Verbal Noun. molað	buaile
Verbal Adj. molta	buaillte

## NOTES ON THE MOODS AND TENSES.

## The Present Tenses.

269. The Present Tense is always formed by adding *aim*, *air*, &c., to the stem when the last vowel is broad; if the last vowel is slender add *im*, *ir*, *eann*, &c. The last syllable of the first person plural is often pronounced rapidly—*e.g.*, *molaimí* (*mul'-a-mwid*), *ciperí* (*k'red'imid*); but in the South of Ireland this syllable is lengthened, *molaimí* (*mul'-a-meed*), *ciperí* (*k'red'-imeed*). Verbs of more than one syllable ending in *ig* add *mí*, not *imí*, in the first person plural of this tense.

270. In Ulster the ending *mí* of the first person plural is very often separated from the verb, and used instead of the pronoun *inn* as *Connac mí é*. We saw him; *Connac ré mí*. He saw us. On no account should this corruption be imitated by the student.

271. The *old* form of the third person singular ended in  $\alpha\acute{o}$  or  $\iota\acute{o}$ , and the analytic forms *found in books*, and sometimes in the northern dialect, are got from this form: as  $\mu\omicron\lambda\alpha\iota\acute{o}$   $\rho\iota\eta\eta$ , we praise.

272. The analytic form is not usually found in the first person singular of this tense, nor is the synthetic form often used in the second person plural.

### The Imperfect Tense.

273. The initial consonant of this tense is usually aspirated in the active voice, when possible.

The termination  $\alpha\acute{o}$  or  $\epsilon\alpha\acute{o}$  in the 3rd sing. of this tense, as also in the Imperative and Conditional, is pronounced  $\alpha\acute{c}$ , or  $\alpha\acute{m}$ .

274. When none of the particles  $n\acute{\iota}$ ,  $\alpha\eta$ ,  $n\acute{\alpha}\acute{c}$ , &c., precede the Imperfect Tense,  $\upsilon\omicron$  may be used before it. This  $\upsilon\omicron$  may be omitted except when the verb begins with a vowel or  $\rho$ . The compound particles,  $n\acute{\iota}\omicron\eta$ ,  $\alpha\eta$ ,  $n\acute{\alpha}\rho$ ,  $\xi\upsilon\eta$ ,  $\epsilon\acute{\alpha}\rho$ , &c., can *never* be used with the Imperfect Tense.

275. Whenever the word "*would*" is used in English to describe what used to take place, the Imperfect Tense, not the Conditional, is used in Irish, as—

He *would* often say to me.  $\eta\eta$   $m\acute{\iota}\eta\iota\epsilon$   $\alpha\upsilon\epsilon\iota\eta\epsilon\alpha\acute{o}$   $\rho\acute{e}$   $\iota\omicron\eta\eta$ .

### The Past Tense.

276. In the Past Tense active voice the initial consonant of the verb is aspirated. The remark which

has just been made with regard to the use of  $\omega$  before the Imperfect Tense applies also to the Past Tense.

In the Autonomous form  $\omega$  does not aspirate, but prefixes  $n$  to vowels.

277. With the exception of the aspiration of the initial consonant, the third person singular of this tense is exactly the same as the second person singular of the Imperative (*i.e.*, the stem of the verb).

278. The particle formerly used before the Past Tense was  $\rho\omicron$ . It is now no longer used by itself, but it occurs in combination with other particles.

The most important of these compounds are:—

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| (1) $\Delta\eta$ , whether ( $\Delta\eta + \rho\omicron$ ).                                      | $\Delta\eta \text{ } \upsilon\alpha\iota\tau \text{ } \rho\acute{\epsilon}$ ? Did he strike?  |
| (2) $\zeta\upsilon\eta$ , that ( $\zeta\omicron + \rho\omicron$ ).                               | $\Theta\epsilon\iota\eta \text{ } \rho\acute{\epsilon} \text{ } \zeta\upsilon\eta \text{ } \upsilon\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon\alpha\rho \text{ } \acute{\epsilon}$ .<br>He says that I struck him. |
| (3) $C\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , where ( $c\acute{\alpha} + \rho\omicron$ ).                          | $C\acute{\alpha}\eta \text{ } \acute{\epsilon}\alpha\eta\nu\nu\iota\gamma\iota\rho \text{ } \Delta\eta \text{ } \kappa\alpha\rho\alpha\iota\iota$ ?<br>Where did you buy the horse?             |
| (4) $\mu\upsilon\eta\alpha\eta$ , unless ( $\mu\upsilon\eta\alpha + \rho\omicron$ ).             | $\mu\upsilon\eta\alpha\eta \text{ } \upsilon\alpha\iota\tau \text{ } \rho\acute{\epsilon}$ , unless he struck.  |
| (5) $\eta\iota\omicron\eta$ , not ( $\eta\iota + \rho\omicron$ ).                                | $\eta\iota\omicron\eta \text{ } \acute{\epsilon}\rho\epsilon\iota\omicron \text{ } \rho\acute{\epsilon}$ . He did not believe.  |
| (6) $\eta\acute{\alpha}\eta$ or $\eta\acute{\alpha}\acute{\epsilon}\alpha\eta$ , whether ...not. | $\eta\acute{\alpha}\eta \text{ } \acute{\epsilon}\rho\epsilon\iota\omicron \text{ } \rho\acute{\epsilon}$ ? Did he not believe?   |



- (7) **Ἐν, to whom (το, to +** **Δ + πο).** **Ἄν ἔειπεν ὅτιν γεαττάρ μο**  
**λεῖδάρ.** The man to  
 whom I promised my  
 book.
- (8) **Ἐν, by or with which** **Ἄν μαίρε ἔν βυαίλεδὸ ἐ,**  
**(λε + Δ + πο).** The stick with which  
 they beat him (or he  
 was beaten).

**279. The compounds of πο aspirate.** These compounds are used with the Past Tense of all verbs except the following:—**ἦν**, was; **εἰς**, gave or brought; **ἦν**, bore; **ἦν**, saw; **ἦν**, came; **ἦν**, found, got; **ἦν**, went; **ἦν**, made or did.

The compounds of πο are used in some places before **εἰς** and **ἦν**.

**N.B.**—**ἦν** and **ἦν** are used instead of **ἦν** and **ἦν** after negative and interrogative particles. Instead of **ἦν** and **ἦν**, **ἦν** and **ἦν** (ὅτι) are used in Munster.

### The Future Tense and Conditional.

**280.** All the inflections of the Future and Conditional in the first conjugation begin with the letter **ἦ**, which in the spoken language is generally pronounced like “h.” This “h” sound combines with the letters **β, ϑ** and **ζ** (whenever the stem ends in these) changing them in sound into **ἦ, ἦ, ἦ**, respectively.



from the ordinary past participle, as it may occur in verbs which have no past participle, *e.g.* :—

“Ír deimín naé bfuil tuine naé beirte óó ar coiméao oim.” “It is certain that there is no person *who will not have to be* on his guard against me.” (Letter of Seán Ó Néill, 1561.) “Cuirtear ar an rgeul, naé beirte oo neac out i n-euodcar.” It may hence be learned that *it is not proper* for anyone to fall into despair. ní beirte as a feunao (or simply, ní feunta). It must not be denied. Here beirte is the *Participle of Necessity* of the verb bí.

## 285. Derivative Participles.

ion-molta	in-feubta	ion-buailte	ion-fóirte
ro-molta	ro-feubta	ro-buailte	ro-fóirte
oo-molta	oo-feubta	oo-buailte	oo-fóirte

**286.** The prefix ion- or in- denotes *what is proper or fit to be done*: as ion-molta, fit to be praised, deserving of praise.

The prefix ro- denotes *what is possible or easy to do*: as ro-feubta, capable of being burst, easy to burst.

**287.** The prefix oo- denotes *what is impossible or difficult to do*: as oo-buailte, incapable of being struck, hard to strike.

**288.** These derivative participles seem to be formed rather from *the genitive of the verbal noun* than from the participle: as faḡáil, finding.

ro-faḡála, easily found. oo-faḡála, hard to find.

## 289. Declension of Verbal Noun.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. } Acc. }	molΔθ	molτΔ
Gen.	molτΔ	molΔθ (molτΔ)
Dat.	molΔθ	molτΔιθ
Nom. } Acc. }	buΔΔθ	buΔιττε
Gen.	buΔιττε	buΔΔθ (buΔιττε)
Dat.	buΔΔθ	buΔιττιθ

290. Many verbal nouns are seldom or never used in the plural. As a rule the genitive singular of the verbal noun is identical in form with the past participle; but many verbal nouns are declined like ordinary nouns: nearly all those ending in Δετ, Διτ, and Διμιν belong to the 3rd declension—*e.g.*, τΔβΔιτ, act of taking; gen., τΔβΔιτ: τιτ, running; gen. πεΔτΔ: τεανΔιμιν, act of following; gen. τεανΔιμινΔ: τιυβΔιτ, act or walking; gen. τιυβΔιτ: τΔρ, act of growing; gen. τΔρ, &c.

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

291. The second conjugation comprises two classes of verbs—(1) **derived verbs** in ις or υις; and (2) **syncopated verbs**.

**292. Syncopated verbs** are those in which the vowel in the final syllable of the stem is omitted when any termination *commencing with a vowel* is added: as  $\text{ԼԵԾԱՐ}$ , *speak*;  $\text{ԼԵԾՐԱԻՄ}$  (not  $\text{ԼԵԾԱՐԻՄ}$ ), *I speak*. **Verbs of more than one syllable whose stem ends in**  $\text{ւլ}$ ,  $\text{ւն}$ ,  $\text{ւր}$ ,  $\text{ւր}$ ,  $\text{ւնց}$ , **belong to this class.**

## VERBS IN $\text{ւց}$ (-ււց).

### 293. Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	Past Participle.	V. Noun.	Meaning.
1.	$\text{ԵԱՒԼՆԻՍ}$	$\text{ԵԱՒԼՆՈՒԹԱՐ}$	$\text{ԵԱՒԼՆԻՍԷ}$	$\text{ԵԱՒԼՆԱԾ}$	gather
2.	$\text{ՇԵԱՆՆԱՒԼՆԻՍ}$	$\text{ՇԵԱՆՆՈՒԹԱՐ}$	$\text{ՇԵԱՆՆԱՒԼՆԻՍԷ}$	$\text{ՇԵԱՆՆԱԾ}$	buy

**294.** Except in the *Future* and *Conditional*, all verbs in  $\text{ւց}$  and  $\text{ււց}$  are conjugated like  $\text{ԵԱՒԼ}$  (first conjugation), except that the  $\text{ւ}$  is aspirated in all terminations beginning with that letter. It is, therefore, necessary to give only the *Future* and *Conditional* in full.

### 295. Future.

#### SINGULAR.

- |  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| 1. $\text{ԵԱՒԼՆՈՒԹԱՐ}$ , I shall gather. | $\text{ՇԵԱՆՆՈՒԹԱՐ}$ , I shall buy |
| 2. $\text{ԵԱՒԼՆՈՒԹԱՐԻ}$ ,                | $\text{ՇԵԱՆՆՈՒԹԱՐԻ}$ .            |
| 3. $\text{ԵԱՒԼՆՈՒԹԱՐՈՒ ՔԵ՛}$ ,           | $\text{ՇԵԱՆՆՈՒԹԱՐՈՒ ՔԵ՛}$ .       |

#### PLURAL.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. $\text{ԵԱՒԼՆՈՒԹԱՐԻՄ}$<br>( $\text{-ՇԱՄԱՐՈՒ}$ ), | $\text{ՇԵԱՆՆՈՒԹԱՐԻՄ}$<br>( $\text{-ՇԱՄԱՐՈՒ}$ ). |
| 2. $\text{ԵԱՒԼՆՈՒԹԱՐՈՒ ՔԻՅ՛}$ ,                    | $\text{ՇԵԱՆՆՈՒԹԱՐՈՒ ՔԻՅ՛}$ .                    |
| 3. $\text{ԵԱՒԼՆՈՒԹԱՐՈՒ}$ ,                         | $\text{ՇԵԱՆՆՈՒԹԱՐՈՒ}$ .                         |

**Relative.**  $\text{ԵԱՒԼՆՈՒԹԱՐԻ}$ .  $\text{ՇԵԱՆՆՈՒԹԱՐԻ}$ .

**Autonomous.**  $\text{ԵԱՒԼՆՈՒԹԱՐԻ}$   $\text{ՇԵԱՆՆՈՒԹԱՐԻ}$ .

296.

**Conditional.**

## SINGULAR.

- |                   |                 |               |
|-------------------|-----------------|---------------|
| 1. b̃aileócaimn,  | I would gather. | ceannócaimn.  |
| 2. b̃aileóct̃á;   |                 | ceannóct̃á.   |
| 3. b̃aileócað ré, |                 | ceannócað ré. |

## PLURAL.

- |                      |  |                  |
|----------------------|--|------------------|
| 1. b̃aileócaim̃ir    |  | ceannócaim̃ir    |
| (-amuir)             |  | (-amuir).        |
| 2. b̃aileócað r̃ib̃, |  | ceannócað r̃ib̃. |
| 3. { b̃aileócair̃    |  | { ceannócair̃    |
| { b̃aileócaðaoir̃    |  | { ceannócaðaoir̃ |

**Autonomous.** b̃aileóct̃aí

ceannóct̃aí

297. In early modern usage, when the stem ended in -uĩḡ, preceded by o, n, t, l, or r, these consonants were usually attenuated in the Future and Conditional: as áir̃uĩḡ, *raise*, future áir̃ueócað; r̃al̃uĩḡ, *soil*, future r̃aileócað; but nowadays áir̃uócað, r̃alócað, &c., are the forms used.

**Syncopated Verbs.**

298. The personal endings of syncopated verbs vary somewhat according as the *consonant commencing* the last syllable of the stem is broad or slender.

Type (1). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a broad consonant*,\* as r̃uaḡair̃ (r̃óḡair̃), *proclaim*.

Type (2). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a slender consonant*, as coĩḡil, *spare*.

---

\* A few of these take te in past participle; as oḡḡail, *open*, oḡḡailte; ceangail, *bind*, ceangailte. The parts of these verbs [258 c.] which are formed from the past participle will, of course, have slender terminations. e.g., o'ḡḡailteá, *you used to open*.



299 In early modern usage the Future is formed by lengthening the vowel sound of the last syllable of the stem from *αι* or *ι* to *εό*. In the case of Type 1 the broad consonant which commences the final syllable of the stem must be made slender. Examples: *ιnnιp*, *inneopao*, *I shall tell*; *οίbiη*, *οίbeopaiη*, *you will banish*; *ιmιp*, *ιmeopaiο* *ré*, *he will play*; *coigil*, *coigεoiao*, *I shall spare*; *puagair*, *puagεopaiο*, *they will proclaim*; *ο'puagεopiao* *ré*, *he would proclaim*; *cooaii*, *coiueoiao*, *I shall sleep*; *coiueoiainn*, *I would sleep*.

300. In the present-day usage the Future stem is formed as if the verb ended in *ig* or *uig*: by adding *-óc* in Type 1 and *-eóc* in Type 2.

### 301. Principal Parts.

	Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	V. Noun.
Type (1).	<i>puagair</i>	<i>puagipóciao</i>	<i>puagairca</i>	<i>puagria(ο)</i>

### 302.

Type (2).	<i>coigil</i>	<i>coigieóciao</i>	<i>coigilte</i>	<i>coigile</i>
-----------	---------------	--------------------	-----------------	----------------

### 303. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SING. 1.	—	—
2.	<i>puagair</i> , proclaim	<i>coigil</i> , spare
3.	<i>puagriao</i> <i>ré</i>	<i>coigieao</i> <i>ré</i>
PLUR. 1.	<i>puagrimir</i>	<i>coiglimir</i>
2.	<i>puagriao</i>	<i>coigiló</i>
3.	<i>puagriaoir</i> ( <i>-aoaoir</i> )	<i>coigiloir</i>
Autonomous.	<i>puagarcan</i>	<i>coigiltear</i>

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

304.

Present Tense.

SING. 1.	fuaspaím, I proclaim	coigtim, I spare
2.	fuaspaí	coigir
3.	fuaspaíonn ré <sup>a</sup>	coigleann <sup>c</sup> ré
PLUR. 1.	fuaspaímis	coiglimis
2.	fuaspaíonn sib <sup>b</sup>	coigleann sib <sup>d</sup>
3.	fuaspaí	coigir
Relative.	fuaspaí	coigleap
Autonomous.	fuaspaítear	coigiltear

305.

Imperfect Tense.

SING. 1.	o'fuaspaínn	coiglinn
2.	o'fuaspaíteá	coigilteá
3.	o'fuaspaíonn ré	coigleáonn ré
PLUR. 1.	o'fuaspaímis	coiglimis
2.	o'fuaspaíonn sib	coigleáonn sib
3.	o'fuaspaíodís (-daois)	coigilodís
Autonomous.	fuaspaítear	coigiltear

306.

Past Tense.

SING. 1.	o'fuaspaí	coigleap
2.	o'fuaspaí	coigir
3.	o'fuaspaí ré	coigil ré
PLUR. 1.	o'fuaspaímar	coigleamar
2.	o'fuaspaíodar	coigleáodar
3.	o'fuaspaíodar	coigleáodar
Autonomous.	fuaspaíod	coigleáod

<sup>a</sup>[fuaspaíod]<sup>b</sup>[fuaspaítear]<sup>c</sup>[coigilod]<sup>d</sup>[coigiltear]

307.

**Future Tense.****SINGULAR.**

1. fuaspiócaó	coigleócaó
2. fuaspiócair	coigleócair
3. fuaspiócaíó ré	coigleócaíó ré

**PLURAL.**

1. fuaspiócaimíó	coigleócaimíó
2. fuaspiócaíó ríó	coigleócaíó ríó
3. fuaspiócaíó	coigleócaíó

**Relative Form.** fuaspiócar      coigleócar

**Autonomous.** fuaspióccair      coigleóccair

308.

**Conditional.**

SING. 1. o'fuaspiócaínn	coigleócaínn
2. o'fuaspióccá	coigleóccá
3. o'fuaspiócaó ré	coigleócaó ré
PLUR. 1. o'fuaspiócaimír	coigleócaimír
2. o'fuaspiócaó ríó	coigleócaó ríó
3. o'fuaspiócaíóir	coigleócaíóir

**Autonomous.** fuaspióccái      coigleóccái

309.

**SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.****Present Tense.**

SING. 1. fuaspaó	coigleao
2. fuaspair	coiglip
3. fuaspaíó ré	coiglip ré
PLUR. 1. fuaspaíimíó	coiglipimíó
2. fuaspaíó ríó	coiglip ríó
3. fuaspaíó	coiglip

**Autonomous.** fuaspair      coiglipair

## 310.

## Past Tense.

SING. 1.	բաճարաւոյ	օրհնու
2.	բաճարեմ	օրհնուի
3.	բաճարած թ	օրհնած թ
PLUR. 1.	բաճարաւոր	օրհնուի
2.	բաճարած թի	օրհնած թի
3.	բաճարաւոր	օրհնուի

Autonomous, բաճարեալ օրհնու

## 311. Past Participle and Participle of Necessity.

բաճարեալ օրհնու

## 312.

## Compound Participles.

ion-բաճարեալ	ion-օրհնու
ro-բաճարեալ	ro-օրհնու
oo-բաճարեալ	oo-օրհնու

## 313.

## Verbal Nouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
NOM. } բաճար(ո) (բաճարի) բաճարեալ		
ACC. }		
GEN.	բաճարեալ	բաճար(ո) (բաճարեալ)
DAT.	բաճար(ո) (բաճարի) բաճարեալի	
NOM. }		
ACC. }	օրհնու	—
GEN.	օրհնու	—
DAT.	օրհնու	—

314. In stems of Type (2) ending in ղ, the Participle is usually in the form եալեալ, not լիլե, as տնայ, *banish*: տնայեալ, *banished*; խաղ, *play*; խաղեալ, *played*.

The endings formed on the participle [see par. 258 c.] follow this change, e.g., Imperfect 2nd singular, տնայեալի; Present Auton., տնայեալի, &c.

### 315. General Rules for the formation of Verbal Noun.

(a) As a general rule verbs of the first conjugation form their verbal noun in  $\Delta\theta$ , if the final consonant of the stem be broad; in  $\epsilon\Delta\theta$ , if it be slender, as—

ʔūn, shut	ʔūn $\Delta\theta$
mīl, destroy	mīl $\epsilon\Delta\theta$
mot, praise	mo $\epsilon\Delta\theta$
lēiḡ, read	lēiḡ $\epsilon\Delta\theta$ .

(b) When the last vowel of the stem is  $\imath$  preceded by a broad vowel, the  $\imath$  is *usually* dropped in the formation of the verbal noun, as—

bu $\Delta$ īl, strike	bu $\Delta$ l $\Delta\theta$
ʔōiḡ, burn	ʔōḡ $\Delta\theta$
ḡoiṇ, wound	ḡon $\Delta\theta$
bṛūiḡ, bruise	bṛūḡ $\Delta\theta$

The  $\imath$  is not dropped in—

c $\Delta$ oiṇ, lament	c $\Delta$ oiṇ $\epsilon\Delta\theta$
rḡ $\Delta$ oiṭ, loose	rḡ $\Delta$ oiṭ $\epsilon\Delta\theta$
rṁu $\Delta$ iṇ, reflect	rṁu $\Delta$ iṇ $\epsilon\Delta\theta$

(c) Verbs of the second conjugation ending in  $\imath$ ,  $\imath$  or  $\imath$  generally form their verbal noun by adding  $\tau$ , as—

ʔībīṛ, banish	ʔībīṛ $\tau$
coṛ $\Delta$ iṇ, defend	coṛ $\Delta$ iṇ $\tau$ (coṛ $\Delta$ iṇ $\imath$ )
l $\Delta$ ḡ $\Delta$ iṛ, speak	l $\Delta$ ḡ $\Delta$ iṛ $\tau$
coiḡīl, spare	coiḡīl $\tau$

(d) Derived verbs ending in *uig* form their verbal noun by dropping the *i* and adding *ao*; as, *áirúig*, *raise*, *áirúgaó*.

(e) Derived verbs in *ig* form their verbal noun by inserting *u* between the *i* and *g* and then adding *ao*; as *míniḡ*, *explain*, *míniugaó*.

316. There are, however, many exceptions to the above rules. The following classification of the modes of forming the verbal noun will be useful.

(a) Some verbs have their verbal noun like the stem, *e.g.*, *fár*, *grow*; *ól*, *drink*; *ruṭ*, *run*; *ruám*, *swim*, &c.

(b) Some verbs form their verbal noun by dropping *i* of the stem, *e.g.*, *cuir*, *put or send*, *cun*; *coirḡ*, *check*, *corḡ*; *rḡuir*, *cease*, *rḡun*; *ḡuit*, *weep*, *ḡul*, &c.

(c) Some verbs add *amain* or *eamain* to the stem to form their verbal noun, *e.g.*, *caill*, *lose*, *caillteamain(τ)*; *creo*, *believe*, *creoreamain(τ)*; *fan*, *stay*, *fanamain(τ)*, *lean*, *follow*, *leanamain(τ)*; *rḡar*, *separate*, *rḡaramain(τ)*, &c.

In the spoken language *τ* is usually added to the classical termination *-amain*.

(d) A few add *an* or *ean* for the verbal noun, *e.g.*, *leas*, *knock down*, *leasan*; *léis*, *let or permit*, *léisean*; *treis*, *abandon*, *treisean*; *teilḡ*, *throw or cast*, *teilḡean*.



(e) A few add *am* or *eam*, e.g., *reap*, stand, *reapam*; *cait*, spend, consume, *caiteam*; *deun*, do or make, *deunam* (or *deunao*); *feit*, wait, *feiteam*.

(f) A small number end in *ait* or *gait*, as *gab*, take, *gabait*; *rag*, find, *ragait*; *rag*, leave, *ragait*; *peao*, whistle, *peaogait*.

A fairly full list of irregular verbal nouns is given in Appendix V.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

317. In Old and Middle Irish the conjugation of verbs was very complex, but by degrees the varieties of conjugations became fewer, and nearly all verbs came to be conjugated in the same way. At the commencement of the modern period (i.e., about the end of the sixteenth century) about fifteen verbs in common use retained their old forms. These are now classed as irregular. Excepting occasional survivals of older forms, all the other verbs had by this time become regular; so that from the stem of the verb it was possible in nearly every instance to tell all its forms except the *verbal noun*.

During the modern period even the irregular verbs have, through the operation of analogy, shown a tendency to adopt the forms of the modern regular conjugations.

### τáim, I AM.

318. The correct spelling of this verb is undoubtedly *atáim*, but long since it has lost its initial *a*, except when it occurs in the middle of a sentence, where it usually has a relative force. Some persons, by confounding this initial *a*, which really belongs to the verb, with the modern relative particle *a*, write the *a* separated from the *ta*: as *a tá* instead of *atá*.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

319. ————— bímír, let us be  
 bí, be thou bíðir, let you be  
 bíð þó ré, let him be bíðir. let them be

Autonomous, bíttar.

The negative particle is ná.

All the persons, except the 2nd sing., are often written as if formed from the spurious stem bíð: *e.g.*, bíðeð þó ré.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 320. Present Tense—Absolute.

## SYNTHETIC FORM.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

τáιμ, I am

τάιμíð, we are

τάιρ,\* thou art

τά ρíð, τάττοι, you are

τά ρέ, he is

τάίð, they are

Autonomous, τάττάρ

## Present Tense (Analytic Form).

τά μέ, I am

τά ρínn, we are

τά tú, thou art

τά ρíð, you are

τά ρέ, he is

τά ρíð, they are

## 321. Present Tense—Dependent.

ρúιιμ

ρúιιμίð

ρúιιρ

ρúιι ρíð

ρúιι ρέ

ρúιιð

Autonomous, ρúιιττάρ.

---

\* The early modern form, viz., ττοι, is still used in Munster, *e.g.*, Cionnur ττοι? (or Cionnur ττοι'n tú?) *How are you?*

Negatively.	Interrogatively.	Neg. Interrog
I am not, &c.	Am I, &c.	Am I not, &c.
ní fhuilim	an bhfuilim	nac bhfuilim
ní fhuilir	an bhfuilir	nac bhfuilir
ní fhuil ré	an bhfuil ré	nac bhfuil ré
ní fhuilmíó	ar. bhfuilmíó	nac bhfuilmíó
ní fhuil rió	an bhfuil rió	nac bhfuil rió
ní fhuiliró	an bhfuiliró	nac bhfuiliró

The analytic forms are like those given above; as,  
ní fhuil ríao, nac bhfuil tú, &c.

### 322. Habitual Present.

#### SINGULAR.

bím (bíóim)

bír (bíóir)

bíonn ré (bíó ré, bíóeann ré)

#### PLURAL.

bímíó (bíóimíó)

bíonn rió, bící

bíó (bíóiró)

Negatively, ní bím, &c. Interrogatively, an mbím, &c.

Neg. Interrog., nac mbím, &c.

Relative form bíor (bíóear).

Autonomous, bícear

### 323. Imperfect Tense (*I used to be*).

#### SINGULAR.

to binn (to bíóinn)

„ bíceá („ bíóceá)

„ bíóó ré („ bíóeao ré)

#### PLURAL.

to bínir (bíóimír)

„ bíóó rió

„ bíóir (bíóóir)

Autonomous, bící

Negatively, ní binn

Interrogatively, an mbinn?

Neg. interrog. nac mbinn?

324.

**Past Tense.****ABSOLUTE.**

то бiор (бiрeар)	то бiомар (бiрeамар)
„ бiр (бiрiр)	„ бiобар (бiрeабар)
„ бi рe	„ бiотар, бiрeатар

**Autonomous, бiчeар**

325.

**DEPENDENT.**

рабар	рабамар
рабайр	рабабар
райб рe	рабатар

**Autonomous, рабчар****Negative,** нi рабар, нi рабайр, нi райб рe, &c.**Interrogatively (Was I? &c.).**

ан рабар ан рабайр ан райб рe ан рабамар, &amp;c.

**Neg. interrog. (Was I not? &c.).**

наc рабар наc рабайр наc райб рe, &amp;c.

326.

**Future Tense.****SINGULAR.****PLURAL.**

бeат, беат (бeиrеат)	бeимiт, беимiт (бeиrомiт)
бeиr, беиr (бeиrиr)	бeиr рiб, бeиrчi
бeиr, беиr рe	бeиr, беиr (бeиrиr)

**Relative Form,**

бeар, бeар (бeиrеар)

**Autonomous,**

бeиrчeар, беиrчeар

**Negatively,**

нi бeат

**Interrog.,**

ан мбeат ?

**Neg. Interrog.,**

наc мбeат ?

### 327. Secondary Future or Conditional.

do béinn (béirínn)	béimír (béirímír)
„ béíteá (béiríteá)	béadó, beadó (béiríbeadó) ríð
„ béadó, beadó (béiríbeadó) ré	béiríð (béiríðir)

Autonomous,	beirípi, béití
Negative,	ní béinn
Interrog.,	an mbéinn
Neg. interrog.,	náð mbéinn

### 328. THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

#### Present Tense.

so raðaðo	so raðmuro
so raðair	so raib ríð (raðtíðoi)
so raib ré	so raðair

The negative particle for this tense is **ná**: as,  
**ná raib maic áðat.** No thanks to you.

### 329. Past Tense.

so mbínn	so mbímír
so mbíteá	so mbíoró ríð
so mbíoró ré	so mbíoríð

The negative particle is **nár**.

#### Autonomous Form.

so raðtar!	may (they) be! (for once).
so mbítear!	„ „ (generally).

## Verbal Noun.

beic̃, to be.

## 330. Phrases containing the Verb Noun.

Ir féioir liom (Δ)* beic̃	I can be, &c.
Ní féioir liom (Δ) beic̃	I cannot be, &c.
Tis leat (Δ) beic̃	You can be, &c.
Ní tis leat (Δ) beic̃	You cannot be, &c.
Caitfir̃ó ré beic̃	He must be, &c.
Caitfir̃ó mé beic̃	I must be, &c.
Ní fuláir go raib̃ tú	You must have been, &c.
Ir cor̃máil go raib̃ tú	
Níor b'féioir nó bí tú	
Ní cor̃máil go raib̃ mé	I must not have been, &c.
Ní fuláir nac̃ raib̃ mé	
Ir cóir òom (Δ) beic̃	I ought to be.
Ní cóir òuit̃ (Δ) beic̃	You ought not to be.
Buò cóir òó beic̃	He ought to have been.
Níor cóir òom (Δ) beic̃	I ought not to have been.
Buò máic̃ liom (Δ) beic̃ ann	I wish I were there.
Ba máic̃ liom go raib̃ mé	I wish I had been there.
ann	
Tá ré le beic̃ ann	He is to be there.

331. The forms *ruitim* and *raðar* are used—

(1) After the particles *ní*, not; *cá*, where? *an* (or *Δ*), whether? *go*, that; and *nac̃* or *ná*, that (conj.)...not.

\* This Δ is usually heard in the spoken language.



(2) After the relative particle *Δ*, when it is preceded by a preposition, after the relative *Δ* when it means "what," "all that," "all which," and after the negative relative *nač*, who...not, which...not. *Cá b-fuit ré?* Where is it? *Ní fuit Δ fíor aḡam.* I don't know. *Čá fíor aḡam ná fuit ré ann.* I know it is not there. *Deir ré go b-fuit ré plán.* He says that he is well. *Sin é an fear nač b-fuit aḡ obair.* That is the man who is not working. *‘Dubairt ré uíom nač raib ré ann.* He told me he was not there.

**332.** We sometimes find the verb *fuit* eclipsed after the negative *ní*, not; as, *ní b-fuit ré* he is not

For the use of the Relative Form refer to pars. 554-560.

### THE ASSERTIVE VERB 1S.

**333.** The position of a verb in an Irish sentence is at the very beginning; hence, when a word other than the verb is to be brought into prominence, the important word is to be placed in the most prominent position—viz., at the beginning of the sentence, under cover of an *unemphatic impersonal verb*. There is no stress on the verb so used; it merely denotes that prominence is given to some idea in the sentence other than that contained in the verb. There is a similar expedient adopted in English: thus, "He was speaking of you," and, "It

is of you he was speaking.” In Irish there is a special verb for this purpose, and of this verb there are forms to be used in principal clauses and forms to be used in dependent clauses—*e.g.*:

1ṛ mīre an fear. I am the man.

Deirim sup ab é Seagán an fear. I say John is the man.

### 334. Forms of the Assertive Verb.

(a) *In Principal Sentences.*

**Present Tense,** 1ṛ. **Relative,** 1ṛ or ar.

**Past Tense,** ba.

[**Future Simple,** buò. **Relative,** bur].

**Secondary Future or Conditional,** baò.

**Subjunctive,** ab; sometimes ba.

**Subjunc. Pres.** (*with* so) so mba, supab; (*with* ná) námba, nápa.

**Subjunc. Past.** óa mbaò, “*if it were.*”

### 335. Present Tense.

1ṛ mé, I am; or, it is I.      1ṛ rinn, we are, it is we.

1ṛ tú, thou art, it is you.      1ṛ ríò, you are, it is you.

1ṛ é, he is, it is he.

1ṛ íaò, they are, it is they.

1ṛ í, she is, it is she.

### 336.

### Past Tense.

ba mé,

I was, it was I.

ba tú,

thou wast, &c.

óob' é, b' é, ba h-é,

he was, &c.

óob' í, b' í, ba h-í

she was, &c.

ba rinn,

we were, &c.

ba ríò,

you were, &c.

óob' íaò, b' íaò, ba h-íaò

they were, &c.

buō or būp is never used in the spoken language, and scarcely ever in writing, except when a superlative adjective or adverb occurs in a sentence, the verbs of which are in the Future Tense.

**337. In the Present Tense the verb 1S is omitted after all particles except mā,** if: as, 1p mé an fear. I am the man; ní mé an fear. I am not the man.

**338. In the Past Tense ba is usually omitted after particles when the word following ba begins with a consonant:** as, Ap maic leat an áit? Did you like the place? náp beas an luac é? Was it not a small price? ba is not usually omitted when the following word begins with a vowel or p, but the a is elided: as, níop v' é rin an ragsart. That was not the priest. Notice that the word immediately after ba or baō, even when ba or baō is understood, is usually aspirated when possible.

*(b) In Dependent Sentences.*

**339. Present Tense.**—ab is used instead of 1p after sup, meaning “that”; as, meapaim supab é rin an fear. I think that is the man. Before a consonant ab is usually omitted; as, deip ré sup mipe an fear. He says that I am the man. ab is always omitted after nać, that...not. Saolaim nać é rin an pí. I think that is not the king.

**340. Past Tense.**—The word ba or baō becomes v' in dependent sentences and is usually joined to the

particle which precedes it. When the following word begins with a consonant the *v'* is usually omitted. *meapaim supb é reo an teac.* I think that this was the house; *meapann ré nár maič le Niall beič annro.* He thinks that Niall did not like to be here. *An meapann tú sup maič an rgeut é?* Do you think that it was a good story?

**341. Conditional.**—In dependent sentences *ba* or *baō* becomes *mba*. *Saoitim go mba maič teip out teac.* I think he would like to go with you. *Deir ré nac mba maič teip.* He says that he would not like. In the spoken language the tendency is to use the past tense forms in dependent sentences; hence Irish speakers would say *sup maič* in the above sentence instead of *go mba maič*, and *nár maič* instead of *nac mba maič*.

The *Future* is never used in dependent sentences in the spoken language.

## beir, BEAR or CARRY.

342.

### Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
beip	beuppaō	beipče	bpeič

This verb is conjugated like *buaít*, except in the Past, Future and Conditional.

343.

### Past Tense.

*pušar, pušair, &c.*, like *motar* (par. 264).

The prefixes *ro* and *no* were not used before this Past Tense in early usage and not generally in present-day usage.

344.

**Future.**

βευρραο, βευρραι, &c., like μοτραο (par. 265).

In early modern usage there was no ϣ in this Tense, or in the Conditional. The rule was that when a short vowel in the Present became long in the Future stem no ϣ was added. This rule is still observed in the Futures ending in -όεαο or -εοέαο.

**Conditional.**

βευρραίνν, &c., like μοτραίνν (par. 266).

**Verbal Noun** βρειτ, gen. βρειτε or βειρτε.

345. This verb is of very frequent use in the idiom “βειρ αρ”; *lay hold on, catch, overtake*; e.g., ϣυγαο ορμ, I was caught. νί ϣυιτ βρειτ αρ. There is no laying hold on him (or it).

**ΤΑΘΔΙΡ, GIVE or BRING.****Principal Parts.**

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
	βευρραο	ταθαριτα	
ταθαρι	τιυθραο	τυγετα	ταθαριτ
	ταθαριραο		

346.

**IMPERATIVE MOOD.****SINGULAR.****PLURAL.**

- |                       |            |                      |
|-----------------------|------------|----------------------|
| 1. —                  | ταθραιμιρ, | τυγαμιρ              |
|                       | (ταθραμ)   |                      |
| 2. ταθαρι             | ταθραιο    |                      |
| 3. ταθραο or τυγαο ϣέ | ταθραιοιρ, | τυγαοιρ (or -αοαοιρ) |

**Autonomous,** ταθαριταρ, τυγεταρ.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 347. Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
SING. 1.	(το-) βεῖνυμ	ταῦραῖμ
2.	(το-) βεῖνυρ	ταῦραῖρ,
3.	(το-) βεῖν(-εανν ρέ	ταῦρανν ρέ
PLUR. 1.	(το-) βεῖνυμίω	ταῦραῖυμίω
2.	(το-) βεῖνεανν ρίβ	ταῦρανν ρίβ
3.	(το-) βεῖνιω	ταῦραῖω

τῡςαῖμ, &c. (like μοῖαῖμ), may be used in both constructions.

**Autonomous**, (το-)βεῖντεαρ, ταῦαρτεαρ or τῡςταρ.

348. By the "Dependent Form" of the Verb we mean that form which is used after the following Particles, viz., *νί*, not; *αν*, whether; *ναέ*, whether... not; or who, which or that...not; *γο*, that; *κά*, where; *μυνα*, unless; *οά*, if; and the relative when governed by a preposition.

## 349. Imperfect Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(το-)βεῖνυνν	ταῦρανν
(το-)βεῖντεα	&c., like ο'φῡαζῡρανν
&c., like βῡαῖτῡνν (262)	(305)

Or, *τῡςανν*, *τῡςτα*, &c., for both *absolute* and *dependent* constructions.

**Autonomous**, βεῖντι, ταῦαρταοι, τῡςταοι.



### Past Tense.

**350.** The Past Tense has only one form: *εἰςαυ*, *εἰσαυ*, &c., like *ἦσταυ* (264). *Αὐτον εἰσαυ*.

In early usage this Past Tense did not take *οο* or *πο*, as *εἰς ο-εἰςαυ*, "that I gave." In present-day usage this peculiarity is sometimes adhered to and sometimes not.

### 351. Future Tense.

#### ABSOLUTE.

(*οο-*)*εἰσαυαυ*

&c.,

like *ἦσταυ* (265)

#### DEPENDENT.

*εἰσαυαυ, εἰσαυαυ*

*εἰσαυαυ, εἰσαυαυ*

*εἰσαυαυ ῥε*

*εἰσαυαυ, &c.*, may be used in both constructions.

**Autonomous,** *εἰσαυαυ εἰσαυαυ*

### 352. Conditional.

(*οο-*)*εἰσαυαυν*

&c.,

like *ἦσταυν* (266)

*εἰσαυαυν, εἰσαυαυν*

*εἰσαυαυτᾶ, εἰσαυαυτᾶ*

&c.

*εἰσαυαυν, &c.*, may be used in both constructions.

**Autonomous,** *εἰσαυαυ, εἰσαυαυ.*

### SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

This Mood occurs only in dependent construction.

**353. Present**—*εἰσαυ, εἰσαυ, εἰσαυ ῥε, &c.*, or *εἰσαυ, εἰσαυ, &c.*

**354. Past**—*εἰσαυν, &c.*, like *ἦσταυν* (268).

### Verbal Noun.

*εἰσαυτ, gen. εἰσαυτᾶ.*

355.                    **ἈΒΑΙΝ, SAY.****Principal Parts.**

<b>Imperative.</b>	<b>Future.</b>	<b>Participle.</b>	<b>Verbal Noun.</b>
<b>ἈΒΑΙΝ</b>	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ῥεῦρη\text{ᾶ}\text{ο}} \\ \text{Ἀβηρό\text{ᾶ}\text{ου}} \end{array} \right.$	<b>ῥάι\text{ο}\text{τε}</b>	<b>ῥά\text{ο}</b>

356.                    **IMPERATIVE MOOD.**

- |                           |  |
|---------------------------|--|
| 1. —                      | Ἀβηαιμῖρ (Ἀβηαιμ)  |
| 2. ἈΒΑΙΝ                  | Ἀβηαι\text{ο}  |
| 3. Ἀβη\text{ᾶ}\text{ο} ῥέ | Ἀβηαι\text{ο}\text{ῖ}\text{ρ}, Ἀβη\text{ᾶ}\text{ο}\text{ῖ}\text{ρ} |

357.                    **Present Tense.****ABSOLUTE.****DEPENDENT.**

- |  |                                   |
|--|-----------------------------------|
| 1. (Ἀ)\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{μ}  | Ἀβηαιμ                            |
| 2. (Ἀ)\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{ρ}  | Ἀβηαιρ                            |
| 3. (Ἀ)\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ} \text{or} \text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ε}\text{ᾶ}\text{ν}\text{ν} ῥέ | Ἀβηαι\text{ν}\text{ν} ῥέ (Ἀβηαιρ) |
| 1. (Ἀ)\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{μ}\text{ῖ}\text{ο}  | Ἀβηαιμῖ\text{ο}                   |
| 2. (Ἀ)\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{τῖ}   | Ἀβηαι\text{ν}\text{ν} ρῖ\text{β}  |
| 3. (Ἀ)\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{ο}  | Ἀβηαι\text{ο}                     |

**Autonomous, (Ἀ)\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ε}\text{ᾶ}\text{ρ}**      Ἀβηαι\text{ᾶ}\text{ρ}

The initial  $\Delta$  of  $\Delta\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{μ}$ , &c., is now usually dropped. The same remark holds for the other tenses. The  $\text{ο}$  of  $\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{μ}$ , &c., is not usually aspirated by a foregoing particle. The absolute and dependent constructions are sometimes confused in spoken usage.

358.                    **Imperfect Tense.****ABSOLUTE.****DEPENDENT.**

- |  |                               |
|--|-------------------------------|
| 1. $\Delta\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{ν}\text{ν}\text{ν}$ | Ἀβηαι\text{ν}\text{ν}\text{ν} |
| 2. $\Delta\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{ε}\text{ᾶ}$         | Ἀβηαι\text{ᾶ}                 |
| 3. $\Delta\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ε}\text{ᾶ}\text{ο}$ ῥέ      | Ἀβηαι\text{ᾶ}\text{ο} ῥέ      |
| &c.  | &c.                           |

**Autonomous,  $\Delta\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{τῖ}$**

**$\Delta\text{ο}\text{ει}\text{ρ}\text{ῖ}\text{ᾶ}\text{οῖ}$**

359.

**Past Tense.**

ատսերար, ատսերարտ	տսերար, տսերարտ
ատսերարի	տսերարի
ատսերարիւր թէ	տսերարիւր թէ
ատսերարամար	տսերարամար
ատսերարածար	տսերարածար
ատսերարածար	տսերարածար

**Autonomous, (ա)տսերած or (ա)տսերարէար**

360.

**Future Tense.**

տսերբատ	ձերծձատ
տսերբարի	ձերծձարի
տսերբարիւր թէ	ձերծձարիւր թէ

**Autonomous, տէարբար****ձերծձար**

In the spoken language the absolute and dependent forms are often confused.

361.

**Conditional.**

տսերբաւնն	ձերծձաւնն
տսերբա	ձերծձա
տսերբատ թէ	ձերծձատ թէ

**Autonomous, տէարբաւ****ձերծձաւ**

In spoken language the two constructions are often confused.

362.

**SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.**

<b>Present,</b>	ձերած,	ձերարի,	ձերարիւր թէ, &c.
<b>Past,</b>	ձերաւնն,	ձերարէձ,	ձերած թէ, &c.

363.

**Participles.**

բաւրտե, իոն-բաւրտե, ու-բաւրտե, րօ-բաւրտե.

**Verbal Noun.**

բաւր or բաւա, gen. sing. and nom. plur. բաւրտե

## 𐤊𐤁𐤁, TAKE.

### 364. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun,
𐤊𐤁𐤁	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀} \\ \text{𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀} \end{array} \right.$	𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤀	𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤀𐤀

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

### 365. Future.

𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀, 𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀𐤀, 𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀𐤀 𐤓𐤂, &c.

### 366. Conditional.

𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀𐤀𐤀, 𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀𐤀, 𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀𐤀 𐤓𐤂, &c.

367. In the spoken language the Future is often made 𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤓𐤁𐤀, &c., and the Conditional, 𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤓𐤁𐤀𐤀, as in regular verbs.

### Verbal Noun.

𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤀𐤀 or 𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤀, gen. sing. and nom. plural 𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤀𐤀.

## 𐤓𐤁𐤊, GET, FIND.

### 368. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
𐤓𐤁𐤊	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀} \\ \text{𐤊𐤁𐤁𐤁𐤀} \end{array} \right.$	𐤓𐤁𐤊𐤀	𐤓𐤁𐤊𐤀𐤀

### 369. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1. —	𐤓𐤁𐤊𐤀𐤀𐤀
2. 𐤓𐤁𐤊	𐤓𐤁𐤊𐤀𐤀
3. 𐤓𐤁𐤊𐤀𐤀 𐤓𐤂	𐤓𐤁𐤊𐤀𐤀𐤀

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

370

## Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(ոօ-) չեմ	բացաւ
„ չեմք	բացաք
„ չեա՞նք, չեմք	բացանք
„ չեմի	բացամի
„ չեա՞նք քի	բացանք քի
„ չեմք	բացաւք

**Autonomous,** (ոօ-) չեմք, բացաւք

In spoken usage բացաւ, &c., is used in both dependent and absolute constructions.

In the Auton. բացաւք, բացաւք and բացաւք are used.

371.

## Imperfect Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(ոօ-) չեմք	բացանք
„ չեմք	բացաւք
&c.	&c.

**Autonomous,** չեմք, բացաւք, բացաւք.

Spoken usage, Absolute, չեմք or բացանք, &c.

372.

## Past Tense.

This Tense has only one form for both absolute and dependent constructions. The prefixes ոօ and քօ are not used with it.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. բացաւ	բացանք
2. բացաւք	բացանք
3. բացաւք	բացանք

**Autonomous,** բացաւք, բացաւք or բացաւք.

In spoken usage բացաւք often becomes բացաւք.

## 373.

## Future Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

- |                     |                         |
|---------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. չեօծա՛ծ, չեածա՛ծ | Եբույճեա՛ծ or Եբայճեա՛ծ |
| 2. չեօծալի, &c.     | Եբույճիլի      &c.      |
| 3. չեօծալո՛ւ թէ     | Եբույճիւ՛ թէ            |
| 1. չեօծալիմի՛       | Եբույճիմի՛              |
| 2. չեօծալո՛ւ թի՛    | Եբույճիւ՛ թի՛           |
| 3. չեօծալո՛         | Եբույճիո՛               |

Autonomous,	{ չեօծեալի	{ բույճեալի
	{ չեածեալի	{ բայճեալի

## 374.

## Conditional.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

- |                        |                       |
|------------------------|-----------------------|
| չեօծալիմն or չեածալիմն | Եբույճիմն or Եբայճիմն |
| չեօծե՛ձ,      &c.      | Եբույճե՛ձ,      &c.   |
| չեօծա՛ծ թէ             | Եբույճեա՛ծ թէ         |
| չեօծալիմի              | Եբույճիմի             |
| չեօծա՛ծ թի՛            | Եբույճեա՛ծ թի՛        |
| չեօծալո՛ւի             | Եբույճիւ՛ի            |

Autonomous,	{ չեօծեալի	{ բույճի
	{ չեածեալի	{ բայճի

## 375.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

**Present,** բաճա՛ծ, բաճալի, բաճալո՛ւ թէ. &c.

**Past,**     բաճալիմն, բաճե՛ձ, բաճա՛ծ թէ, &c.

## 376.

## Participle.

բաճե՛ձ, բայճե՛ձ or բաճե՛ձ.

The derivative participles of this verb are usually formed from the genitive of the verbal noun.

իոն-բաճալե՛ձ, թո-բաճալե՛ձ, ոօ-բաճալե՛ձ.



377.            Deun, DO, MAKE.**Principal Parts.**

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
deun	deunfað	deunta	deunam

378.            IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- |              |           |
|--------------|-----------|
| 1. —         | deunaimir |
| 2. deun      | deunaið   |
| 3. deunað ré | deunaiðir |

**Autonomous, deuntar.**

**INDICATIVE MOOD.**379.            Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1. (oo-)	gním (gníðim)	deunaim
2. „	gnír &c.	deunair
3. „	gní ré or gníonn ré	deunann ré
1. „	gnímíð	deunaimíð
2. „	gnífi	deunann þið
3. „	gníð	deunaið

**Relative, gníor, gníðear**

**Autonomous, gníðear            deuntar**

In present-day usage deunaim, &c., are very frequently used in the absolute construction.

### 380. Imperfect Tense.

#### ABSOLUTE.

ṁo-ḡnín, ḡnirín

„ ḡníteá, &c.

„ ḡníoð ré

„ ḡnīmír

„ ḡníoð ríð

„ ḡníoír

**Autonomous,** ṁo-ḡnící

#### DEPENDENT.

ṁeunáinn

ṁeuntaá

ṁeunað ré

ṁeunaimír

ṁeunað ríð

ṁeunaoír

ṁeuntaoi

### 381. Past Tense.

ṁo-ḡinneap

„ ḡnnír

„ ḡnne ré

„ ḡnneamar

„ ḡnneaðap

„ ḡnneaðap

**Autonomous,** ṁo-ḡnneað

ṁéapnap

ṁéapnair

ṁéapna ré

ṁéapnamap

ṁéapnaðap

ṁéapnaðap

ṁéapnað

In Munster dialect ṁeineap, ṁeinír, ṁein ré, ṁeineamar, ṁeineaðap, and ṁeineaðap are used as the Past Tense in *both* absolute and dependent constructions.

### 382. Future Tense.

#### ABSOLUTE AND DEPENDENT.

ṁeunpao

ṁeunpáir

ṁeunpao ré

ṁeunpaimíð

ṁeunpao ríð

ṁeunpao

**Autonomous,** ṁeunpáir

### 383. Conditional.

ṁeunpáinn

ṁeunpá

ṁeunpao ré

ṁeunpaimír

ṁeunpao ríð

ṁeunpaoír

**Autonomous,** ṁeunpái

## 384. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## Present.

deunad̃ deunair̃ deunaid̃ ré deunamad̃oir, &c.

## Past.

deunad̃inn deuntá deunad̃ ré deunamad̃oir, &c.

## Participles.

deunta ion-deunta ro-deunta do-deunta

## Verbal Noun.

deunam̃ (deunad̃) gen. deunta

## 385. feic, SEE.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
feic	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \acute{c}ipead̃ \\ feicfead̃ \end{array} \right.$	feicte	feicirinc̃

## 386. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- |                |                      |
|----------------|----------------------|
| 1. —           | feicim̃ir (feiceam̃) |
| 2. feic        | feicid̃              |
| 3. feicead̃ ré | feicid̃oir           |

387. The imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plural are hardly ever found; for we rarely command or ask a person to “see” anything, except in the sense of “look at” it. In Irish a distinct verb is always used in the sense of “look at,” such as *feuch*, *dearc*, *breathnaigh*, &c. The verb *feuch* must not be confounded with *feic*; it is a distinct verb, and has a complete and regular conjugation.

388. In early modern Irish *faic* was the stem used in the imperative and in the dependent construction throughout the entire verb.

## 389. INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1. <i>ṽo-ćím</i> ( <i>ćíṽím</i> )	<i>ṽeicím</i>
2. <i>ṽo-ćír</i> , &c.	<i>ṽeicír</i>
3. <i>ṽo-ćí ṽé</i> , <i>ćíonn ṽe</i>	<i>ṽeiceann ṽé</i>
1. <i>ṽo-ćímíṽ</i>	<i>ṽeicímíṽ</i>
2. <i>ṽo-ćíćí</i>	<i>ṽeiceann ṽíṽ</i>
3. <i>ṽo-ćíṽ</i>	<i>ṽeicíṽ</i>
Autonomous, { <i>ṽo-ćítear</i>	<i>ṽeicítear</i>
{ <i>ṽo-ćítear</i>	

390. The prefix *ṽo-*, now usually dropped, is an altered form of the old prefix *at*—*e.g.*, *atćím*. This form survives in the spoken language only in the Ulster form, *'ćím* or *ćíṽím*, &c.

## 391. Imperfect Tense.

<i>ṽo-ćínn</i> , <i>ćíṽínn</i>	<i>ṽeicínn</i>
<i>ṽo-ćíteá</i> , &c.	<i>ṽeicíteá</i>
<i>ṽo-ćíṽṽ ṽé</i>	<i>ṽeiceaṽṽ ṽé</i>
<i>ṽo-ćímír</i>	<i>ṽeicímír</i>
<i>ṽo-ćíṽṽ ṽíṽ</i>	<i>ṽeiceaṽṽ ṽíṽ</i>
<i>ṽo-ćíṽír</i>	<i>ṽeicíṽír</i>

In spoken language *ṽeicínn*, &c., is used in both Absolute and Dependent constructions.

Ulster usage, *ćíṽeann*, *ćíṽeá*, &c.

## 392.

## Past Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

1.	{ ònnac ònnacair	(ònnaircair)	{ facair faca	{ feacair feaca
2.	ònnacair	(ònnaircair)	facair	feacair
3.	ònnaic ré	(ònnairc ré)	faca ré	feaca ré
1.	ònnacamar	[ònnaircamar]	facamar	feacamar
2.	ònnacabair	[ònnaircabair]	facabair	feacabair
3.	ònnacadar	[ònnaircadair]	facadar	feacadair

**Autonomous,** connacar      facair or facc̃air

The older spelling was *atònnac* and *atònnairc*, &c. The *τ* is still preserved in the Ulster dialect: *ṭanaic me*, &c., I saw.

## 393.

## Future Tense.

(oo-)c̃ífeao, c̃íòfeao,	feicfeao,
(oo-)c̃ífir̃, c̃íòfir̃,	feicfir̃,
&c.	&c.

**Autonomous,** c̃ífeair      feicfeair

## 394.

## Conditional.

(oo-)c̃ífir̃inn, c̃íòfir̃inn,	feicfir̃inn,
&c.	&c.

In the Future and Conditional *feicfeao*, &c., and *feicfir̃inn*, &c., can be used in both constructions.

## 395.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

**Present,** feiceao, feicir̃, feicir̃ó ré, &c.

**Past,** feicinn, feic̃teá, feiceao ré, &c.

**Participle,** feic̃te.

396.

**Verbal Noun.**

feicrint, feircint, gen. feicreana.

From the genitive of the verbal noun the **compound participles** are formed: viz., in-feicreana, ro-feicreana, do-feicreana.

397.

**CLOIS or CLUIN, HEAR.**

These two verbs are quite regular except in the Past Tense.

In old writings the particle *at* or *do-* is found prefixed to all the tenses in the absolute construction, but this particle is now dropped.

398.

**Past Tense.**

cualar, cuala                      cualamar

cualair                              cualaḃar

cuala ré                            cualaḃar

**Autonomous, cualačar**

**Verbal Nouns.**

clor or clorint (or more modern cluinint or cluirtin).

**ṬAR, COME.**

399.

**IMPERATIVE.**

SING. 1. —                      PLUR. ṭisimír (ṭiseam)

2. ṭar                              ṭisib

3. ṭiseasḃ (ṭasasḃ) ré      ṭisibir



## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 400. Present Tense.

1. τῖςιμ	τῖςιμοῖο
2. τῖςιρ	τῖςιτί
3. τῖς ρέ	τῖςιο

Relative (wanting).

Autonomous, τῖςιτεαρ.

The Present Tense has also the forms ταςαῖμ or ταςαῖν inflected regularly.

## 401. Imperfect Tense.

τίςιιν, ταςαῖιν, or τεαςαῖιν, regularly.

## 402. Past Tense.

τάνγας, τάνας	τάνγασαμ
τάνγαιρ	τάνγασαρ
τάνις ρέ	τάνγασαο

## 403. Autonomous, τάνγας.

The *ng* in this Tense is not sounded like *ng* in *long*, *a ship*, but with a helping vowel between them—*e.g.*, 2nd pers. sing.—is pronounced as if written τάνγασαιρ; but in Munster the *g* is silent except in the 3rd pers. sing.—*e.g.*, τάνγας is pronounced *haw-nuss*.

404. Future Tense, τιοεραο, &c., inflected regularly; also spelled τιουεραο, &c.

Relative, τιοεραρ

Conditional, τιοεραῖιν, &amp;c., inflected regularly.

**405. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.**

**Present,** *τιγεαο, ταγαο, or τεαγαο*, inflected regularly.

**Past,** *τιγιnn, ταγαnn, or τεαγαnn*, inflected regularly.

**406. Verbal Noun,** *τεαατ* (or *τιοθαατ, τιθαατ*)

**Participle,** *τεαατα or ταατα*.

**407. τείξ, GO.**

N.B.—The present stem is also spelled *τείρ*, but *τείξ* is preferable, as it better represents the older form, *τιαξ* or *τείξ*.

**408. IMPERATIVE.**

- |               |                    |
|---------------|--------------------|
| 1. —          | τείξιμίη (τείγεαμ) |
| 2. τείξ       | τείξιθ             |
| 3. τείγεαο ηέ | τείξιθίη           |

**409.** In the Imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plur. other verbs are now usually substituted, such as *γαθ, ιμτίξ, τείηξ*. The use of *τείηξ*, plur. *τείηξιθ*, seems to be confined to these two forms; *ιμτίξ* has a full, regular conjugation.

**INDICATIVE MOOD.****410. Present.**

- |                         |             |
|-------------------------|-------------|
| 1. τείξιμ (τείριμ)      | 1. τείξιμίθ |
| 2. τείξηη &c.           | 2. τείξτί   |
| 3. τείξ ηέ, τείγεαnn ηέ | 3. τείξιθ   |

**Autonomous,** *τείξτεαη*

**Imperfect Tense.**

ṡéiḡinn (or ṡéiṛōinn), &c., regularly.

**411. Past Tense.****ABSOLUTE.****DEPENDENT.**

1. ṡuaṛḁar

ṡeaṡar

2. ṡuaṛḁair

ṡeaṡair

3. ṡuaṛḁ ré

ṡeaṡairḁ ré

1. ṡuaṛḁamar

ṡeaṡamar

2. ṡuaṛḁḁar

ṡeaṡḁar

3. ṡuaṛḁḁar

ṡeaṡḁar

**Autonomous,** ṡuaṛḁar

ṡeaṡar

In Munster ṡuaṛḁar, &c., is used in the dependent construction, as níor ṡuaṛḁ ré, he did not go. ṡeaḡar, &c., is also used in Munster.

**412. Future.****SINGULAR.****PLURAL.**

1. raṡar, raḡar

raṡamar, raḡamar

2. raṡair, raḡair

raṡairḁ ríḁ, raḡairḁ ríḁ

3. raṡairḁ ré, raḡairḁ ré

raṡair, raḡair

**Relative,** raṡar, raḡar.**Autonomous,** raṡar, raḡar.**413. Conditional.**

raṡainn or raḡainn, &c., regularly.

The Future and Conditional are sometimes spelled raṡar, &c., and raṡair, &c.

## 414. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, *τείγεαο, τείγηι, τείγητό ρέ, &c.*

Past, *τείγινη, τείγητά, τείγεαο ρέ, &c.*

## 415. Verbal Noun.

*ουτ*, gen. *ουτα* (sometimes *ουττα*).

## Participle of Necessity.

*ουττα* (as, *νί ουττα ὁό, he ought not to go*).

## Derivative Participles.

*ιον-ουτα, ρο-ουτα, το-ουτα.*

416. *ιτ*, EAT.

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

## Principal Parts.

Imper.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
<i>ιτ</i>	<i>ιοραο</i>	<i>ιττε</i>	<i>ιτε</i>

## 417. Future Tense.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

- |                           |                    |
|---------------------------|--------------------|
| 1. <i>ιοραο (ιορραο)</i>  | <i>ιοραμαοιτο</i>  |
| 2. <i>ιοραιη, &amp;c.</i> | <i>ιοραιτό ριθ</i> |
| 3. <i>ιοραιτό ρέ</i>      | <i>ιοραιτο</i>     |

Relative, *ιοραη (ιορραη).*

Autonomous, *ιορταη.*

## 418. Conditional.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

- |                              |                   |
|------------------------------|-------------------|
| 1. <i>ιοραινη (ιορραινη)</i> | <i>ιοραμαοιρ</i>  |
| 2. <i>ιορτά, &amp;c.</i>     | <i>ιορατό ριθ</i> |
| 3. <i>ιορατό ρέ</i>          | <i>ιοραιοίρ</i>   |

419. As well as the regular Past Tense, ὀΐτεα, &c., there is another Past Tense, viz., οὐαῶα, in use.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. οὐαῶα	οὐαῶαμα
2. οὐαῶαι	οὐαῶαδα
3. οὐαῶε	οὐαῶατα

### ῥιγίμ, I REACH.

420. This verb is nearly obsolete, its place being taken by the regular verbs ῥοιόμ and ῥοιρίμ.

Its Past Tense is inflected like τάνας.

1. ῥάνγας, ῥάνας	ῥάνγαμα
2. ῥάνγαι	ῥάνγαδα
3. ῥάνγις	ῥάνγατα

### 421. Verbal Noun.

ῥοέταιν or ῥιαέταιν.

ῥιγίμ has a special usage in the phrase ῥιγίμ αἰεα, “*I need*,” (whence, ῥιαέτανα, need, necessity: ῥιαέταναε, necessary: from the verbal noun.)

### μαρῶαίμ or μαρῶιγίμ, I KILL.

422. This verb is quite regular except in Future and Conditional.

**Future,** μαρῶαο, μαρῶόαο, μαρῶεαο, μαρῶεόαο or μαρῶεαο (with usual terminations).

**Conditional,** μαρῶαίην, μαρῶόαίην, μαρῶεαίην, μαρῶεόαίην or μαρῶεαίην, &c., &c.

### Verbal Noun.

μαρῶαο or μαρῶυγαο, to kill or killing.

## SOME DEFECTIVE VERBS.

423. ΔΡ, quoth, say or said. This verb is used only when the exact words of the speaker are given. (It corresponds exactly with the Latin "*inquit*." ) It is frequently written ΔΡΔ or ΔΡΡ, as ΔΡΔ μίρε, said I. When the definite article immediately follows this latter form the ρ is often joined to the article, as, ΔΡΡ αν ρεαρ or ΔΡ αν ρεαρ, says the man. "C1Δ τū ρéιν?" ΔΡ ρείρεαν. "Who are you?" said he.

When the exact words of the speaker are not given translate "says" by ρείρ, and "said" by ρουβΔίρτ. When the word "*that*" is understood after the English verb "*say*" σο (or ναc if "*not*" follows) *must be expressed in Irish.*

424. ϐΔΡ, It seems or it seemed. This verb is always followed by the preposition λε: as, ϐΔΡ τιom, it seems to me, methinks; or, it seemed to me, methought. ϐΔΡ λεατ. It seems to you. ϐΔΡ λείρ αν βρεαρ. It seemed to the man.

425. ρεΔϐΔΡ, I know, I knew. This verb is nearly always used negatively or interrogatively, and although really a past tense has a present meaning as well as a

past. ní feadair. I do, or did, not know. ní feadair ré. He does not know, or he did not know.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

- |                  |              |
|------------------|--------------|
| 1. feadar        | 1. feadamar  |
| 2. feadair (-ir) | 2. feadabair |
| 3. feadair ré    | 3. feadadar  |

N.B.—The forms just given are those used in the spoken language, the literary forms are: feadar, feadair tú, feadair ré, feadamar, feadabair, and feadadar.

426. **ṪÁRLA**, There came to pass, it happened or happened to be. It is also used to express the meeting of one person with another.

427. **Ṫ'ṪÓBÁIR** or **ṪA ṪÓBÁIR**, "It all but happened." *E.g.*, Ṫ'ṪÓBÁIR ṪAM TUITIM, It all but happened to me to fall, I had like to fall, I had well nigh fallen. The same meaning is expressed by Ṫ'ṪÓBÁIR SO TUITIRINN.

428. **ṪEUṪAIM**, I can, is regular in all its tenses, but it has no imperative mood.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

---

### The Adverb.

429. There are not many simple adverbs in Irish, the greater number of adverbs being made up of two or more words. Almost every Irish adjective may be-



come an adverb by having the particle “**SO**” prefixed to it: as, **maĩt**, good; **so maĩt**, well; **umāt**, humble; **so h-umāt**, humbly.

**430.** This **so** is really the preposition **so\*** with its meaning of “with.” (Do not confound this word with **so** meaning “to,” they are two distinct prepositions). Of course this particle has now lost its original meaning in the case of most adverbs.

**431.** Adverbs may be compared; their comparative and superlative degrees are, however, those of the adjectives from which they are derived; the particle **so** is not used before the comparative or superlative.

**432.** It may be well to remark here that when an adjective begins with a vowel **so** prefixes **h**, as **so h-annam**, seldom.

**433.** The following list may now be regarded as simple adverbs although many of them are disguised compounds.

<b>amāc</b>	out (used <i>only</i> after a verb of motion).
<b>amuiḡ, amuić</b>	outside, out; never used after a verb of motion. He is out, <b>čā rē amuiḡ</b> . He is standing outside the door, <b>čā rē 'na řearam čaob amuiḡ de 'n čorap</b> .

---

\* This preposition is now used only in a few phrases; as **mīle so leič**, a mile and (with) a half: **řlat so leič**, a yard and a half: **bliačōin so leič ó řoin**, a year and a half ago.

ám, amác, } however.  
ámčac, }

amám, alone, only.

amait, as, like.

amlair, thus.

anoct, to-night.

anoir, now.

apér, last night.

apír(τ). again.

cá ? where ?

ceana, already, previously.

conur ? cionnur ? how ?

com, com, as (*see par.* 154).

feapoa, henceforth, at once.

leir, } also.  
freirín, }

fór, yet.

ı muóa, amú, astray (mis-  
taken).

inoé (ané), yesterday.

inoiu (anoiu), to-day.

ı mbárac (amárac), to-  
morrow.

irteač, in (*motion only*).

irčig, inside (*rest*).

šo h-annam, seldom.

šo fóit, yet, awhile.

ní (níor), } not.  
ča (čar), (*Ulster*), }

nuair, when.

cačain ? } when ?  
cařoin ? }

mar, as, like.

mar řin, thus.

říú, *even* ; as, níor labair řé říú don focal amám.  
*He did not speak even one word.* Šan říú na h-anáta  
oo čapmanš. *Without even taking breath.* říú is  
really a **noun**, and is followed by the **genitive case**,  
**whenever the definite article comes between it and**  
**the noun** ; **otherwise it is followed by a nomina-**  
**tive case.**

**434.** It may be useful to remark here that the words  
inoiu, *to-day* ; inoé, *yesterday* ; ı mbárac, *to-morrow* ;  
apér, *last night* ; anoct, *to-night* ; **can be used only**  
**as adverbs.** *He came to-day.* Čáinš řé inoiu. *He*

*went away yesterday.* 'O' imčíš pé inóé. When the English words are **nouns**, we must use an t̃á (or an oir̃óce) before inóiu, inóé, ariér, etc. *Yesterday was fine.* 'Bí an t̃á inóé breáš. *To-morrow will be wet.* Berò an t̃á i mbárac̃ fluc̃. *Last night was cold.* 'Bí an oir̃óce ariér fuar.

### 435. Interrogative Words.

when? caṭṭain? cé an uair? which (*adj.*)? cé an...?  
cé an t-am?

where? cá? cé an áit? what? cao? ceuro?  
conao? ceuro?

how? conur (cionnur)? cé whither? cá?  
an éaoi? so dé mar?

why? cao 'na t̃aoḃ? cao whence? cao ar? cá'r  
cuige? cao fáct? cé ab ar?  
an fáct?

how far? } cé an fáit? how much? } cé meuro?

how long? } an fáoda? how many? } an mó?

which (*pron.*)? cioca? cé? who? cé? cía? cé h-é (í,  
íao)?

### Up and Down.

436. { ruar, upwards, **motion upwards** from the  
place where the speaker is.  
Up. { aníor, upwards, **motion up** from below to the  
place where the speaker is.  
t̃uar (also spelled řuar), up, **rest above** the  
place where the speaker is.  
aníor (abur),\* up, **rest** where the speaker is.

\* This form is used in Ulster and North Connaught, but generally this word is used only for rest on this side of a room, river, &c., or here, where we are.

Down.	{	ρίορ, downwards, <b>motion down</b> from where the speaker is.
		ανυαρ, downwards, <b>motion down</b> from above to where the speaker is.
		τιορ (ρίορ), down, below, <b>rest below</b> the place where the speaker is.
		ανυαρ (αβυρ),* down, <b>rest</b> where the speaker is.

437. The following examples will fully illustrate the use of the words for “up” and “down” :—

A.		A says to B, I'll throw it <b>down</b> , Καίτρω μέ ρίορ έ.	
		Is it <b>down</b> yet?	Όφυντ ρέ τιορ πόρ?
		Throw it <b>up</b> ,	Καίτ ανίορ έ.
		It is <b>up</b> now,	Τά ρέ ανίορ ανοιρ.
		B says to A, I'll throw it <b>up</b> , Καίτρω μέ πυαρ έ.	
B.		Is it <b>up</b> yet?	Όφυντ ρέ τυαρ πόρ?
		Throw it <b>down</b> ,	Καίτ ανυαρ έ.
		It is <b>down</b> now.	Τά ρέ ανυαρ ανοιρ.

N.B.—He is **up** (*i.e.*, he is not in bed), Τά ρέ 'να ρυιόε.

We are **up**, Τάρινν 'νάρρυιόε

\* See foot-note at end of page 160.



# North, South East, West.

The root *oir* means *front*: *iar* means *back*.

440. The ancients faced the rising sun in naming the points of the compass; hence *ċoir*, east; *ċiar*, west; *ċuair*, north; *ċear*, south.

441.

Rest	Motion from the speaker towards the	Motion towards the speaker from the	Prepositional use, east of, west of, north of, south of,
<i>ċoir</i> , east	<i>roir</i>	<i>anoir</i>	{ * <i>larroir</i> ve; <i>ar</i> an <i>taob ċoir</i> ve; <i>uia† ċoir</i> ve
<i>ċiar</i> , west	<i>riar</i>	<i>aniar</i>	{ * <i>larriar</i> ve; <i>ar</i> an <i>taob ċiar</i> ve; <i>uia ċiar</i> ve
<i>ċuair</i> , north	<i>ó ċuair</i>	<i>anċuair</i>	{ * <i>larċuair</i> ve; <i>ar</i> an <i>taob ċuair</i> ve; <i>uia ċuair</i> ve
<i>ċear</i> , south	<i>ó ċear</i>	<i>anċear</i>	{ * <i>larriear</i> ve; <i>ar</i> an <i>taob ċear</i> ve; <i>uia ċear</i> ve

442. The noun "north," etc., is *an taob ċuair*, *an taob ċear*, etc., or *tuairceart*, *veirceart*, *iarċair*, and *oirċear*. These latter words are obsolescent.

443.

The North wind, *an ġaoċ anċuair* N.W. wind, *ġaoċ aniar anċuair*  
 „ South „ „ *anċear* S.E. wind, *ġaoċ anoir anċear*  
 „ East „ „ *anoir* etc., etc.  
 „ West „ „ *aniar* Notice the change of position in  
 Irish.

444. With reference to a house, *riar* is *inwards*; *roir* is *outwards*.

\* *lear* or *lar* may be used. † Probably a corruption of *taob*.







εαυτον (*written .i.*),

ὁ ἐναντιῶ,

ὁ ἐνανταῶ,

σο λεορ,

τ'άρη ητοόις (τοόις),

το ζειτ,

ι ζεεαυοόρ,

lom-laitpeac,

laitpeac bonn,

αρ αν τοοιρτ,

αρ υαιριῶ,

υαιρεανντα,

ανοιρ 7 αρίρ,

σο η-αίριςτε,

σο ρονηάτῶς,

σο μορμῶρ,

σο η-υρμῶρ,

αρ ball,

τῶτα αν ρζείλ or τῶτα ριῦτο, by the bye.

ι η-αίρῶε,

coranāirῶε,

σο θείμιν or σο θεαρῶτα, indeed.

σο θείμιν ιρ σο θεαρῶτα, } really and truly.

ambriactar 'r ambara,

τῶ ρίριῶ,

μαρ αν ζεεαυνα,

ὁ ροιν ι λειτ,

ὁ ροιν αμας,

αρ εἰςιν,

namely.

awhile ago.

ages ago.

enough.

sure, surely.

immediately, instantly.

sometimes.

especially.

by and bye, after awhile.

on high.

at full gallop.

indeed.

really, in fact.

likewise, in like manner.

from that time to this.

from that time out.

hardly, with difficulty,  
perforce.

<p> an éurō ip mó òe, }  ap (a) iomaō, } </p>	at most.
<p> an éurō ip luḡa òe, }  ap a laḡaō (laiḡeāō), } </p>	at least.
<p> ap a řon řan (ip uile), </p>	notwithstanding (all that).
<p> com řaōa 'ř (<i>use le before noun</i>) }  an řaio (<i>rel. form of verb</i>) } </p>	whilst, as long as.
<p> o' aon ḡnó, </p>	purposely.
<p> com maiť aḡur oá, </p>	just as if.
<p> le h-éipḡe an lae, </p>	at dawn.
<p> ḡan coinne le, }  ḡan řúil le, } </p>	unexpectedly.
<p> oe ḡnác (ḡnácac), </p>	usually.
<p> mař aťá, mař aťaio, </p>	namely, viz., i.e.
<p> ōř ířiol, </p>	secretly, lowly.
<p> ōř ářo, </p>	aloud, openly.
<p> ap maiřoin, </p>	in the morning.
<p> řa řrácťnóna, }  um řrácťnóna. } </p>	in the evening.
<p> ap maiřoin inřoiu, </p>	this morning.
<p> ap maiřoin i mbářac, </p>	to-morrow morning.
<p> řa řrácťnóna inřoiu, </p>	this evening.
<p> aťřuḡaō inře, </p>	on the day before yesterday
<p> aťřuḡaō i mbářac, </p>	} on the day after to-
<p> anoirťear, umánoirťear, </p>	
<p> lā ap n-a bāřac, </p>	on the following day.
<p> i mbliaōna, </p>	( <i>during</i> ) this year.
<p> anupaiō, </p>	( <i>during</i> ) last year.
<p> aťřuḡaō anupaiō, </p>	( <i>during</i> ) the year beforelast

446. The phrases which have just been given about morning, evening, &c., are strictly adverbial, and cannot be used as nouns.

447.

### Adverbs.

### Nouns.

ὁ Δ Ὀμῖναις, on Sunday	Ὀμῖναις, m., Sunday
ὁ Δ Ἡμεῖν, on Monday	Ἡμεῖν, m., Monday
ὁ Δ Τρίτη, on Tuesday	Τρίτη, f., Tuesday
ὁ Δ Τετάρτη, on Wednesday	Τετάρτη, f., Wednesday
ὁ Δ Πέμπτη, on Thursday	Πέμπτη, f., Thursday
ὁ Δ Πέμπτη, on Friday	Πέμπτη, f., Friday
ὁ Δ Σάββατον, on Saturday	Σάββατον, m., Saturday

448. Ὀ Δ takes the name of the day in the genitive case; it is used only when “on” is, or may be, used in English—*i.e.*, when the word is adverbial.

Ὀ Δ is really an old word for day. It occurs in the two expressions ἡ νῦν, to-day; ἡ νῦν, yesterday. It is now never used except before the names of the days of the week, and in the two expressions just mentioned.

449.

### “Head-foremost.”

He fell head-foremost,	Ὁ ἐπεὶ πρὶ ἡ νῦν* ἡ ἐπὶ.
I fell head-foremost,	Ὁ ἐπεὶ πρὶ ἡ νῦν* ἡ ἐπὶ.
She fell head-foremost,	Ὁ ἐπεὶ πρὶ ἡ νῦν* ἡ ἐπὶ.
They fell head-foremost,	Ὁ ἐπεὶ πρὶ ἡ νῦν* ἡ ἐπὶ.

ἡ ἐπὶ.

---

\* ἡ νῦν is a phrase meaning “after,” and is followed by a genitive case.

**However.**

**However** followed in English by an adjective or an adverb is translated into Irish by the preposition **oo** (*or oe*), the possessive adjective **a**, and an **abstract noun** corresponding to the English adjective or adverb.

However good, **o'á fádaí**. However long, **o'á fáio**.

However great, **o'á méio**. However violent, **o'á éisniḡe**.

However high, **o'á doirḡe**. However young, **o'á óiḡe**

**The Adverb "The."**

The sooner the better,	{	<b>o'á luaithe 'read</b> ( <i>ir</i> <i>amhlaid</i> ) <b>ir fearr</b> .
		<b>ní'l o'á luaithe naḡ amhlaid</b> <b>(eaid)</b> <b>ir fearr</b> .
The longer...the bolder,		<b>o'á luaitheadḡ ir fearrḡe</b> .
The longer...the bolder,		<b>o'á fáio 'read</b> <b>ir o'ána</b> .
The sooner...the less,		<b>o'á luaithe 'read</b> <b>ir luḡa</b> .

## CHAPTER VII.

**Prepositions.**

**450.** The following list contains the simple prepositions in use in modern Irish:—

<b>i</b> , <b>a</b> , <b>in</b> , ( <b>ann</b> ) <b>in</b> .	<b>ḡo</b> , <b>to</b> ( <i>motion</i> ).
<b>aḡ</b> , ( <b>aig</b> ), <b>at</b> .	<b>roim</b> , <b>before</b> .
<b>ar</b> , ( <b>air</b> ), <b>on</b> .	<b>roir</b> , <b>between</b> .
<b>ar</b> , <b>out of</b> .	<b>le</b> , <b>with</b> .
<b>oar</b> , <b>by</b> ( <i>in swearing</i> ).	<b>ó</b> , <b>from</b> .
<b>oe</b> , <b>off</b> , <b>from</b> .	<b>tar</b> , {
<b>oo</b> , <b>to</b> .	<b>tar</b> , { <b>over</b> , <b>across</b> .
<b>fé</b> , <b>faoi</b> , <b>fó</b> , <b>fá</b> , <b>under</b> .	<b>tré</b> , <b>trío</b> , <b>through</b> .
<b>ḡan</b> , <b>without</b> .	<b>um</b> , <b>im</b> , <b>concerning</b> , <b>about</b> .

## CHAPTER VIII.

## Conjunctions.

451. The following is a list of the conjunctions in use at present:—

ve bpiğ zo	} because.	mā, vā, if.
ƣaoi ƣāð 'r zo,		muna, muƣa, if...not.
cion iƣ,		ziðeað, however.
cion iƣ zo,		ðop leiƣ ƣin,
æct, but, except.	} moreover.	ƣuð eile (ðe),
æzur (a'ƣ, iƣ, 'r), and.		tuille ƣop,
ioiƣ...æzur, both...and.		tuille eile,
an (aƣ), whether ( <i>interrog.</i> )		maƣ, as.
aƣ a ƣon zo,	} although.	nā, than ; nor.
ƣiúo iƣ zo,		zo (zur), that.
cioð, zið,		maƣ iƣ zo, as though.
cé zo, zið zo,		i vƣeo zo (nac),
zo,	} until (with verbs).	aƣ noƣ zo (nac),
nó zo,		aƣ moð zo (nac),
æct zo,		i zcāƣ zo (nac),
zo vƣi zo,		aƣ ðop zo (nac),
com luac aƣ,	} as soon as.	aƣ ðoiğ zo (nac),
vā luaf ƣ,		i zcāoi zo (nac),
an tuiƣze zo,		ionnuƣ zo (nac),*
ƣop, yet, still.		ƣeaðaƣ, compared with.
ƣul ; ƣaƣ,	} before.	nó, or.
ƣul a vƣi,		ó, since, because.
ƣul mā vƣi,		ó nac, since...not.
ƣul vā vƣi,		oiƣ, for, because.

\* Zo and nac are very frequently separated from ionnuƣ by a subordinate or relative clause: e.g., "ionnuƣ, an tí aƣ a mbiað an ƣiğin ƣin, zo mbiað teafmann aze ó'n oipleað;" so that the person who would be marked with that sign would have protection from the slaughter.

maireadh, well, if so.                      ó éiríonn go, whereas.  
 uime rin, therefore, where-      tar éinne, moreover, be-  
     fore.                      sides, furthermore.  
 ar an ádhair rin, therefore.      nac                      } that...not.  
 mar rin féin, even so.              ná, ná go, }  
 bíodh go, although, whether  
     ...or.

**452.** In Munster “that...not” is usually translated by *ná* followed by the dependent form of the verb. *ná* **neither aspirates nor eclipses**. In the past tense it becomes *nár* which causes aspiration. Whenever “**that...not**” follows a negative (or a *virtual* negative) phrase, *ná go* is used (*ná gur* in the past tense).

Tá fíor aige féin ná fuil an ceart aige. He knows himself that he is not right.

Ní deirim (or *deirim*) ná go bfuil an ceart aige. I don't say that he is not right.

*nac* is used in Munster as a part of the verb *ir*.

**453.** The use of *mar* before a clause is noteworthy.

fá mar a dúdar ré, (according) as he said.

éir mar bí ré deic mbliadhna ríceadh ó ríom.

Beyond (or compared with) how it was 30 years ago.

i ríadhb mar deir tú, regarding what you say.

Éirinnis ré mar a raib fionn. He came to where Finn was.

map atá or map atáio, that is, viz., *i.e.*

map go mbaó iao péin to óeunam an  
gníoma, as if it were they who per-  
formed the act.

map an gceutona, likewise.

map geall ar, on account of.

## CHAPTER IX.

### 454. Interjections and Interjectional Phrases.

Δ,	O (the sign of the Vocative case).
Εητ,	hush ! list !
φόιτιον !	} Alas !
φαιτιον !	
mo vpon !	
mo épeac !	
mo léan !	
mo léan geup !	
פעו !	Behold ! lo !
Ó bú bú ! oc ! uc ! ucón !	Alas !
mo náipe tú !	Shame on you !
. . . Δ bú !	Hurrah for . . . !
פאלטע נומאט !	Welcome !



<p> Díá do beata! }  'Sé do beata! }  Slán leat (lib)!  Slán beo agat (agaid)! }  Beannaíct leat (lib)! }  Díá linn!  Mairead!  Foirgíó (foirgne)!  Faire!  Go dtéiró tú rlan!  Go roirbígíó Díá duit!  Bí 'oo tórt! }  Eirt do beut! }  Mo goimn tú!  Súo ort! }  Sláinte! }  Mait an fear!  Mait an buacail!  Duirdeácar leat! }  Go raib mait agat! }  Go n-éirígíó áó leat!  Náir léigíó Díá rin!  Go mbeannuigíó Díá duit!  Go maire, }  Go maire tú! }  Go bpoiríó Díá orainn!  Oiróce mait duit!  Go dtugaidó Díá oiróce  mait duit! </p>	<p> Hail!   Good-bye!   God be with us!  Well! Musha!  Patience!  Take care! Fie!  Safe home!  God prosper you!   Silence!   Bravo!   Good health!   Good man!  Good fellow!   Thanks! thank you!   Good luck to you!  God forbid!  God save you! Good  morning! &amp;c.   Long life to you!   God help us!  May you have a good night!  May God give you a good  night! </p>
--	---

Ṣo mbuaṑṑaṑ ṑṑa teat !	God grant you success !
Slān coṑaṑṑa na n-oiṑṑe aṣat !	Sound night's sleep to you !
Ṣo ṣcoṑṑaṑ ṣo ṑām !	May you sleep peacefully .
ṑaṑ ṑ ṑṑa oiṑ !	God bless you !
Cuiṑeaṑan ṑé teat !	May God accompany you !
ṑaṑ ṑaṑṣaṑ aṣat !	Long life to you !
ṑuaṑṑ teat !	} Success to you !
ṑaṑ ṣo ṑaṑṑ oiṑ !	
'Seṑṑ !	Well !
'Seṑṑ aṑoiṑ !	There now !
Coṣaṑ i leiṑ !	Whisper (here) !
Ambaṑa !	Indeed !
Mo ṣṑaṑṑm eiṑiṑe ṑu !	Bravo !
A ṑuiṑ !	My dear !
Aṑ aṑiṑe !	Dear me !

---

## CHAPTER X.

---

### WORD-BUILDING.

---

#### Prefixes.

**455.** The following is a list of the principal prefixes used in Irish. Some of them have double forms owing to the rule *caol te caol*.

αιρ or ειρ, back, again ; like the English *re-* ;

ioc, payment ; αιριoc, repayment, restitution.

am or αιm,	Negative particles	πειρò, even ; αιmπειρò, uneven.
an „ αιn,		τράτ, time ; ι n-αντράτ, untimely.
οί „ οίο,*		ceann, a head ; οίceannaο, to behead.
mi „ mío,		comaipte, an advice ; mío-comaipte, an evil advice.
neam „ neim,		niò, a thing ; neimniò, nothing, non-entity.
ear,		cáirtoear, friendship ; ear-cáirtoear, enmity.

é or éa, a negative particle. It eclipses c and τ and becomes éaς before ρ. Cóiρ, just ; éaςcóiρ, unjust ; τrom, heavy ; éaοτrom, light ; cormait, like ; eugramait, different.

οιοc, bad, evil ; meap, esteem ; οιοc-meap, reproach, disesteem.

com, equal ; αιmριρ, time ; com-αιmpeapiac, contemporary.

---

\* οί, οίο eclipse words beginning with b or p, οίombuiοeacap, ingratitude.

an,	} Intensifying particles	mór, big; an-mór, very big.
il, iol,		ṽač, a colour; iolṽačač, many-coloured.
ṛó,		mór, big; ṛó-mór, too big.
ṛár,		te, warm; ṛár-te, excessively warm
lán,		aiṛṇéil, vast; lán-aiṛṇéil, awfully vast.
úr,		ṣṛánṽa, ugly; úṛ-ṣṛánṽa, very ugly.

leač, a half; leač-uair, half an hour; ṛgeut, a story; leič-ṛgeut, an excuse.

in, ion, fit, suitable; ṽeunta, done; in-ṽeunta, fit to be done; ṛáṛṽe, said; ion-ṛáṛṽe, fit to be said; ion-molta, praiseworthy; ion-ólta, drinkable; in-ṛṽe, eatable, edible. (See pars. 286, 288.)

neum, before; ṛáṛṽe, said; neum-ṛáṛṽe, aforesaid.

ṛṛuč, back; ṛṛuč-čeač, coming and going; ṛṛuč-ṽuaṽaṽ, palpitation, or a return stroke.

ban, a feminine prefix; ṛṽaič, a prince; ban-ṛṽaič, a princess; ban-tiṣeapna, a lady.

ač, a reiterative particle: ṛáṽ, a saying; ač-ṛáṽ, a repetition; ačuaṛ, another time; an ačṽliavāin, next year; an ačṛeačṽmāin, next week. Ač has sometimes the force of “dis” in dismantle, as cumav, to form;

at̃cumaðò, to deform, destroy; p̃ioḡaðò, to crown, to elect a king; at̃p̃ioḡaðò, to de-throne.

b̃iṭ, b̃ioṭ, lasting, constant; buan, lasting; b̃ioṭ-buan, everlasting; b̃iṭ-p̃iṇeun, ever-faithful.

ʋo and ro, two particles which have directly opposite meanings, as have often the letters ʋ and r. ʋo denotes *difficulty, ill, or the absence of some good quality*; ro denotes the opposite.

ʋo-ṭeunta, hard to be done	ro-ṭeunta, easy to be done
ʋóṭár, sorrow	róṭár, comfort, joy
ʋonaɾ, bad-luck	rónaɾ, good-luck
ʋub̃aḋ, sad	ruḋaḋ, merry
ʋãiṛḋ̃iɾ, poor	rãiṛḋ̃iɾ, rich
ʋaoi, a fool	raoi, a wise man
ʋiṭ, want, misery	riṭ, peace, plenty
ʋub̃ãiṭce, vice	ruḋãiṭce, virtue
ʋaor, condemned, dear	raor, free, cheap
ʋoḋaɾ, harm	roḋaɾ, profit
ʋona, unlucky, unhappy	rona, lucky, happy
ʋomeann, bad weather	romeann, fine weather
ʋocãm̃ãiṭ, inconvenient	roc̃ãm̃ãiṭ, convenient

#### 456. Affixes or Terminations.

ḋaḋ, when it is the termination of an adjective, means full of, abounding in: b̃p̃iaṭaɾ, a word; b̃p̃iaṭ̃naḋ, wordy, talkative; p̃eunaḋ, grassy.

αc, when it is the termination of a noun, denotes a person or personal agent: as Εἰρεανναc, an Irishman; Αἰθαναc, a Scotchman.

αcτ is an abstract termination, like the English *-ness*: μιτῖρ, sweet; μιτρεαcτ, sweetness.

H.B.—The termination -αcτ is usually added to adjectives.

αιρε, ιρε, ρε, are personal terminations denoting an agent: ργευτ, a story; ργευτιρε, a storyteller; κορ, a foot; κοριρε, a pedestrian.

αιρε, ιρε, are also personal terminations denoting an agent: ceatγ, deceit; ceatγαιρε, a deceiver.

αμαιτ, a termination having the very same force as the English *like* or *ly*: πεαραμαιτ, manly; πλατεαμαιτ, princely, generous.

αρ, εαρ, or sometimes ρ alone, an abstract termination like αcτ: μαιτ, good; μαιτεαρ, goodness; ceann, a head; ceannαρ, headship, authority.

βαρ and βρε have a collective force: as, ρουττε, a leaf (of a tree); ρουττεαβαρ, foliage.

υα, ρα, or τα, is an adjectival termination which has usually the force of the English *-like*: μορρα, majestic; ορρα, golden; γαττα, exotic, foreign (from γαττ, a stranger, a foreigner).

e is an abstract termination like *act* or *ar*: whenever it is added to an adjective the resulting abstract noun, owing to the rule "*caol* te *caol*," has the very same form as the *genitive singular feminine of the adjective*: as, *riat*, generous; *péite*, generosity; *árto*, high; *áiríoe*, height; *geat*, bright; *gíte*, brightness; *áitne*, beauty.

*tao*, *nao*, *rao*, *tao*, *trao*, have all the same meaning as *ao*, viz., full of, abounding in: *muc*, a pig; *muctao*, a piggery; *coill*, a wood; *coillteaó*, a place full of woods; *ruiteao*, bloody; *toilteaó* (*toilteannaó*), willing.

*mar* means *full of, abounding in*: *ceol*, music; *ceolmar*, musical; *speann*, fun; *speannmar*, full of fun, amusing; *ciatlmar*, sensible, intelligent.

*oir*, *roir*, or *toir*, denotes a *personal agent*: *rpeal*, a scythe; *rpealaoir*, a mower, reaper; *roir-reóir*, a door-keeper.

### Diminutives.

457. In Irish there are three diminutive terminations, viz., *ín*, *án*, and *óg*. However, *ín* is practically the only diminutive termination in Modern Irish as *án* and *óg* have almost lost their diminutive force. A double diminutive is sometimes met with, as *ártoáinín*, a very little height.



## ín.

458. The termination ín, meaning "small" or "little," may be added to almost every Irish noun. Whenever the final consonant is broad it must be made slender (as the in always remains unaltered), the vowels undergoing the same changes as in the formation of the genitive singular, but Ċ is not changed into Š (see pars. 60 and 78).

apal, an ass	apailín, a little ass
feap, a man	feipín, a „ man
Ʒopt, a field	Ʒuipín, a „ field
cailleac, an old woman	caillicín, a „ old woman
ppáio, a street	ppáioín, a „ street, a lane

If the noun ends in e, drop the e and add ín; but if the noun ends in a, drop the a and attenuate the preceding consonant; then add ín.

páipoe	páipóin	nópa	nóipín	mála	máilín
--------	---------	------	--------	------	--------

## 459.

## án.

ppucán, a brook,	from ppuc, a stream.
ápóán, a hillock,	„ ápo, high.
teatƷán, a knitting-needle,	„ teatƷ, a thorn.
biopán, a pin,	„ biop, a spit.
leabpán, a booklet,	„ leabap, a book.
Ʒeugán, a twig,	„ Ʒeug, a branch.
locán, a little lake,	„ loc, a lake.
ƷƷiatán, a wing,	„ ƷƷiat, a shield.

The above are examples of real diminutives, but such examples are not very numerous.

460.

Óḡ.

píartós (péirteos), a worm, from píart, a reptile.  
 lárós, a match, ,, lár, a light.  
 ḡablóḡ, a little fork, ,, ḡabál, a fork.

These are examples of real diminutives in óḡ, but such real diminutives are not numerous, as most nouns in óḡ have practically the same meaning as the nouns from which they were derived (the latter being now generally obsolete): cuiteós, a fly, from cuil, a fly; ṡpíreós, a briar, from ṡpír, a briar; fuinnreós, an ash, from fuinnre, an ash.

In Craig's Grammar we find lúcós, a rat (lúc, a mouse). This example is a striking instance of the fact that the termination óḡ is losing (if it has not already lost) its diminutive force.

All derived nouns in óḡ are feminine.

### Derived Nouns.

**461.** Words are of three classes—Simple, Derivative, and Compound. All simple words are, as a general rule, monosyllables; they are the roots from which derivative and compound words spring. Derivative words are made up of two or more parts. These parts undergo slight changes when they are united to form words, and thus the component parts are somewhat disguised. The difficulty which presents itself to a student in the spelling of Irish is more apparent than real. The principle of vowel-assimilation is the key to

Irish spelling. Let a student once thoroughly grasp the rules for “caot te caot, &c,” “aspiration,” “eclipsis,” “attenuation,” and “syncope,” and immediately all difficulty vanishes.

Derivatives are formed of simple words and particles. The most important of the latter have been already given under the headings “Prefixes” and “Affixes.” We will here give some examples of derivative nouns, a careful study of which will enable the student to split up the longest words into their component parts, and thus arrive at their meanings.

462. *τρom* means heavy; *τρomαρ*, i.e., *τρom* + *αρ* (the abstract termination) means heaviness or weight; *εαοτρom*, light, from *τρom*, and the negative particle *εα*, which eclipses *c* and *τ*, hence the *ο*; *εαοτρomαρ*, lightness, from *εα*, not; *τρom*, heavy; *αρ*, ness; *comτρom*, impartial, fair, or just; from *com*, equal, and *τρom*, heavy; *comτρomαρ*, impartiality, fairness, &c.; *εαγcomτρom*, partial, unjust; from *εα* + *com* + *τρom*; *εαγcomτρomαρ*, partiality, injustice; from *εα* + *com* + *τρom* + *αρ*. *Speaλaοοιρ*, a reaper; from *ρpeat*, a scythe, and *οοιρ*, an affix denoting an agent; the *λ* is put in between the *ι* and *ο* to assist pronunciation: *cάιρoe*, friends; *cάιρoeαρ*, friendliness, friendship; *eυγcάιρoeαρ*, unfriendliness, hostility: *peapaμtαct*, manliness; from *peap* + *αμαιt* + *αct*: *neim-geanaμtαct*, unamiability; from *neim*, not + *gean*, affection + *αμαιt* + *αct*: *pioγαct*, a

kingdom, from  $\mu\acute{o}\varsigma + \alpha\epsilon\tau$ :  $\kappa\omicron\mu\acute{o}\rho\tau\alpha\rho$ , comparison, emulation, competition; from  $\kappa\omicron$  ( $\kappa\omicron\mu$ ), equal, and  $\mu\acute{o}\rho\tau\alpha\rho$ , greatness, *i.e.*, comparing the greatness of one thing with that of another.

**463.** Compound nouns are formed by the union of two or more simple nouns, or of a noun and an adjective.

(A.) A compound noun formed of two or more nouns, each in the nominative case, has its declension determined by the last noun. Its gender also is that of the last noun, unless the first noun-part be such as requires a different gender. The first word qualifies the second, and the initial consonant of the second is *usually* aspirated.

(B.) If the compound is formed of a noun in the nominative form followed by a genitive noun, the first is the principal noun, and determines the declension and gender; the second qualifies the first, and generally remains unaltered, and the aspiration of the initial consonant in this case depends on the gender of the first noun. See par. 21(f).

We will give here a few examples of the two chief kinds of compound nouns. It is usual to employ a hyphen between the nouns in Class A, but not in Class B.

## 464.

## Class A.

bpeuſ-πί, a pseudo king	bpeuſ, a lie, and πί, a king
bun-ρρυτ, a fountain	bun, a source, origin, and ρρυτ, a stream
caτ-ῶαρη, a helmet	caτ, a battle, and ῶαρη, top, head
clap-ῥολαρ, twilight	
cloiſ-τεαδ, a belfry	cloſ, a clock, bell, and τεαδ, a house
cpaοῶ-ῥlearſ, a garland	cpaοῶ, a branch, and ῥlearſ, a wreath
cūt-ῥαιντ, back-biting	cūt, the back of the head, and ῥαιντ, talk
caοιη-ῥεοιτ, mutton	} ρεοιτ, flesh; caοηα, a sheep λαοſ, a calf; muc, a pig μαρτ, a beef
λαοιſ-ῥεοιτ, veal	
muic-ῥεοιτ, pork, bacon	
μαρτ-ῥεοιτ, beef	
λām-ῶια, a household god	} λām, a hand; ῶια, God; euῶαδ, a cloth; ὀρo, a sledge
λām-euῶαδ, a handker- chief, a napkin	
λām-ὀρo, a hand-sledge	
leiτ-ρſeut,* an excuse	leaτ, a half, and ρſeut, a story
ὀη-ῥλατ, a sceptre; ὀη, gold; and ρλατ, a rod	
τιη-ſηάῶ, patriotism; τιη, country; and ſηάῶ, love	

\*ſαῶ μο leiτ-ρſeut I beg your pardon. (Lit. Accept my excuse).

465.

## Class B.

βῆρας ταιρε, a winding-sheet (a garment of death).

φεαρ ceolt, a musician (a man of music).

φεαρ φεαρα, a seer (a man of knowledge; φιορ, gen. φεαρα).

φεαρ τιγε, a householder (a man of a house).

μας τιρε, a wolf (son of (the) country).

κυ μαρια, an otter (a hound of the sea; μυρι, gen. μαρια).

λαος μαρια, a seal (a calf of the sea).

φεαρ ιοναιο, a lieutenant, vicegerent (a man of place).

τεας ορτα, an inn, hotel (a house of entertainment).

μαριστηρι ρκοιτε, a schoolmaster (a master of a school).

υβ ειρε, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen.)

βαν ριθε or βαν τ-ριθε, a fairy (a woman of the ριοθ, a fairy hill).

466.

## A Noun and an Adjective.

αρο-ρι, a high king.

αρο-τιγεαρια, a sovereign lord.

αρο-ρειμ, supreme power, chief power.

ελαον-βρειτ, partiality; ελαον, inclined: and βρειτ, a judgment.

ερομ-τεας, a druidical altar; ερομ, bent; and τεας, a stone, flag.

οδορ-βρειτ, condemnation; οδορ, condemned.

οδορ-ογλας, a bond-slave; ογλας, a servant.



ԵԱՐԾՐԱՇԱՐ (ԵԱՐԾ-ԵՐԱ-  
 ՇԱՐ), a brother by blood } ԵԱՐԾ, real or true.  
 ԵՐԻԾՐԻՐ, a sister by } ԵՐԱՇԱՐ and ՐԻՐ, brother  
 blood. } and sister (in reli-  
 gion).

ՐԻՐ-ԱՐՇԵ, spring water: ՐԻՐ, true, pure; ԱՐՇԵ, water.  
 ՇԱՐԾ-ՐԻՐ, a tempest: ՇԱՐԾ, rough; and ՐԻՐ, weather.  
 ՇՐՐ-ՔԻԱԾ, a hare: ՇԵՐՐ, short; and ՔԻԱԾ, a deer.  
 ՆԱԾ-ՕՈՒՆԵ, an upstart: ՆԱԾ, new, fresh; and ՕՈՒՆԵ,  
 a person.

ՔԵԱՆ-ԱՇԱՐ, a grandfather, }  
 ՔԵԱՆ-ՔԵԱՆ-ԱՇԱՐ (ՔԵ-ՔԵԱՆ-  
 ԱՇԱՐ), a great grand- } ՔԵԱՆ, old; ԱՇԱՐ, a father.  
 father. } ՄԱՇԱՐ, a mother;  
 ՔԵԱՆ-ՄԱՇԱՐ, a grand- } ԱՕՐ, age.  
 mother. } ՔԵԱՇՏ, law; ՕՒՇԵ is a  
 ՔԵԱՆ-ԱՕՐ, old age. } more common word  
 ՔԵԱՆ-ՔԵԱՇՏ, the old law. } for law.

ՏՐԵՍՆ-ՔԵԱՐ, a brave man.

ՏՐԵՍՆ-ԼԱՕՇ, a hero.

ՐԱՐՐ-ՔԵԱԾ, a freehold: ՔԵԱԾ, possession.

ՏՐՈՄ-ԼՈՒՇԵ, a nightmare.

ԱՐԱԼ-ԱՇԱՐ, a patriarch.

ՐԱՐԾ-ՇԻԱԼ, folly, silliness: ՐԱՐԾ, silly; and ՇԻԱԼ, sense

ՐՐԻՐ-ԵՐԱՇԱՐ, an adverb: ՐՐԻՐ, before; and ԵՐԱՇԱՐ, a  
 word.

ՐՐԻՐ-ԻՄԵԱԼ, a frontier, extremity; ԻՄԵԱԼ, a border, a  
 hem.

ՐՐԻՐ-ԵՐԵԻՇ, a prejudice (a fore-judgment).

ՐՐԻՐ-ՆԵԱՐՏ, violence.

ՐՐԻՐ-ԷՆՋԵԱՆ, oppression, compulsion.



### Formation of Adjectives.

467. (a) Adjectives may be formed from many nouns by the addition of  $\Delta\acute{C}$  or  $E\Delta\acute{C}$ , which signifies *full of, abounding in*. All these adjectives belong to the first declension, and are declined like  $\tau\acute{o}\iota\epsilon\alpha\acute{C}$ .

#### NOUN.

$\rho\epsilon\alpha\rho\varsigma$ , anger  
 $\rho\acute{\upsilon}\iota\tau$ , blood  
 $\rho\epsilon\upsilon\rho$ , grass  
 $\beta\upsilon\alpha\rho\acute{o}$ , victory  
 $\beta\rho\epsilon\upsilon\varsigma$ , a lie  
 $\tau\acute{o}\iota\epsilon\alpha\tau\tau$ , one's best endeavour  
 your

$\rho\epsilon\alpha\rho\acute{\alpha}\mu$ , standing  
 $\gamma\eta\acute{o}$ , work  
 $\epsilon\lambda\acute{\upsilon}$ , fame  
 $\rho\alpha\omicron\tau\alpha\rho$ , toil  
 $\lambda\acute{\upsilon}\beta$ , a loop  
 $\rho\alpha\omicron\gamma\alpha\tau$ , life  
 $\iota\ \acute{\alpha}\iota\tau$ , sufficiency  
 $\alpha\iota\beta\alpha$ , Scotland  
 $\varsigma\alpha\epsilon\rho\alpha\mu$ , England  
 $\epsilon\rho\alpha\omicron\beta$ , branch  
 $\epsilon\alpha\rho\rho\alpha\iota\varsigma$ , a rock  
 $\beta\rho\acute{o}\nu$ , sorrow  
 $\rho\alpha\tau$ , dirt  
 $\rho\iota\omicron\rho$ , knowledge  
 $\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho$ , joy  
 $\tau\omicron\iota\lambda\gamma\iota\omicron\rho$ , sorrow

#### ADJECTIVE.

$\rho\epsilon\alpha\rho\gamma\alpha\acute{C}$ , angry  
 $\rho\acute{\upsilon}\iota\tau\epsilon\alpha\acute{C}$ , bloody  
 $\rho\epsilon\upsilon\rho\alpha\acute{C}$ , grassy  
 $\beta\upsilon\alpha\rho\acute{o}\alpha\acute{C}$ , victorious  
 $\beta\rho\epsilon\upsilon\gamma\alpha\acute{C}$ , false, lying  
 $\tau\acute{o}\iota\epsilon\alpha\tau\tau\alpha\acute{C}$ , energetic  
  
 $\rho\epsilon\alpha\rho\mu\alpha\acute{C}$ , steadfast  
 $\gamma\eta\acute{o}\tau\alpha\acute{C}$ , busy  
 $\epsilon\lambda\acute{\upsilon}\tau\epsilon\alpha\acute{C}$ , famous  
 $\rho\alpha\omicron\tau\rho\alpha\acute{C}$ , industrious  
 $\lambda\acute{\upsilon}\beta\alpha\acute{C}$ , deceitful  
 $\rho\alpha\omicron\gamma\iota\alpha\acute{C}$ , long-lived  
 $\rho\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\acute{C}$ , satiated  
 $\alpha\iota\beta\alpha\alpha\acute{C}$ , Scotch  
 $\varsigma\alpha\epsilon\rho\alpha\alpha\acute{C}$ , English  
 $\epsilon\rho\alpha\omicron\beta\alpha\acute{C}$ , branchy  
 $\epsilon\alpha\rho\gamma\epsilon\alpha\acute{C}$ , rocky  
 $\beta\rho\acute{o}\nu\alpha\acute{C}$ , sorrowful  
 $\rho\alpha\tau\alpha\acute{C}$ , dirty  
 $\rho\iota\omicron\rho\alpha\acute{C}$ , intelligent  
 $\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\rho\alpha\acute{C}$ , joyous  
 $\tau\omicron\iota\lambda\gamma\iota\omicron\rho\alpha\acute{C}$ , sorrowful

## NOUN.

cleap, a trick  
 cuirpe, weariness  
 uirge, water  
 neul, a cloud  
 leanb, a child  
 gaoth, wind  
 imníðe, anxiety  
 cúmaect, power  
 reult, a star  
 aipe, care  
 foigib, patience  
 eagla, fear  
 toil, a will  
 cúram, heed  
 iomaice, too much

## ADJECTIVE.

cleapaic, tricky  
 cuirpeaic, weary  
 uirgeaic, watery  
 neulaic, cloudy  
 leanbaic, childish  
 gaothaic, windy  
 imníðeaic, anxious  
 cúmaectaic, powerful  
 reultaic, starry  
 aipeaic, attentive  
 foigíoeaic, patient  
 eaglaic, timid  
 toilteanaic, willing  
 cúramaic, careful  
 iomaiceaic, excessive,  
 copious

(b). Many adjectives are formed by adding *máir* to nouns.

All these adjectives belong to the first declension and are declined like *móir*.

## NOUN.

ádh, luck  
 ceol, music  
 ciail, sense  
 feur, grass  
 feoil, flesh  
 fonn, fancy

## ADJECTIVE.

ádhmair, lucky.  
 ceolmair, musical  
 ciailmair, sensible  
 feurmair, grassy  
 feoilmair, fleshy  
 fonnmair, desirous

## NOUN.

glóir, glory  
 speann, fun  
 luac, price, value  
 líon, number  
 neart, strength  
 ríad, a shadow  
 lúct, activity

## ADJECTIVE.

glórmair, glorious  
 speannmair, funny  
 luacmair, valuable  
 líonmair, numerous  
 neartmair, powerful  
 ríadmair, shy, startled  
 lúctmair, active, nimble

(c). **Very many adjectives are formed from nouns by the addition of *aimail* or *eaimail* (both pronounced oo-il or u-wil). All these adjectives belong to the third declension.**

## NOUN.

fear, a man  
 bean, a woman  
 flait, a prince  
 ainm, a name  
 meap, esteem  
 lá (pl. laete), a day  
 gráin, hatred  
 cairde (pl. cáirde), a friend  
 naim (pl. náim), an enemy  
 croíde, a heart  
 rí (gen. ríog), a king  
 caoi (pl. caoite), a way  
 riar, order  
 sean, affection  
 mod, manner

## ADJECTIVE.

fearaimail, manly  
 beanaimail, womanly  
 flaitreamail, generous  
 ainmeaimail, renowned  
 meapaimail, estimable  
 laeteaimail, daily  
 gráineaimail, hateful  
 cáirdeaimail, friendly  
 náimreamail, hostile  
 croídeaimail, hearty, gay  
 ríogaimail, kingly, royal  
 caoiteaimail, opportune  
 riaraimail, subject, docile  
 obedient  
 seanaimail, affectionate  
 modaimail, mannerly

## NOUN.

tír (pl. tíorṫa), country	
meirneac, } mírneac, }	courage
teine (pl. teinte), fire	
ríab, (pl. ríeibte), a mountain	
ḡreann, fun	
eun, a bird	
comurra, a neighbour	
barántar, authority	

## ADJECTIVE.

tíorṫamail, country-like, homely, social	
mírneamail, courageous	
teinteamail, fiery, igneous	
ríeibteamail, mountainous	
ḡreannamail, funny, gay	
eunamail, bird-like, airy	
comurramail, neighbourly	
barántamail, authentic	

(d). There is a fourth class of adjectives formed by the termination ṫa (ṫa); but it is not as large as the three preceding classes. The following are some of the principal ones :—

ṫiaṫa, godly, divine	ṫaona (ṫaonaṫa) human
ṫearṫa, masculine	ḡráṫa, ugly
ṫanṫa, feminine	cróṫa, brave
óṫa, golden, gilt	beoṫa, lively
ṫaoṫa, heroic	ḡailṫa, exotic or foreign
ṫeanṫa, ancient	naomṫa (naomṫa), holy saintly

Compound adjectives are extremely common in Irish, being usually formed by the union of two or more simple adjectives (sometimes of a noun and an

adjective); but these compound adjectives present no difficulty once the simple adjectives have been mastered.

## FORMATION OF VERBS.

**468.** Verbs can be readily formed from nouns and adjectives by the addition of *ıǵ* or *uıǵ*. The addition of this termination is sometimes accompanied by syncope, which often necessitates slight vowel changes in accordance with the rule “*caol te caol*.”

### 469. (a). Verbs derived from Nouns.

NOUN.	VERB (Stem).
<i>ainm</i> , a name	<i>ainmnıǵ</i> , name
<i>beatha</i> , life	<i>beathuıǵ</i> , nourish
<i>cúinne</i> , memory	<i>cúinnıǵ</i> , remember
<i>cuid</i> , a part	<i>cuidıǵ te</i> , assist (take part with)
<i>cúl</i> , the back of the head	<i>cúluiǵ</i> , retire
<i>raoṭar</i> , exertion	<i>raoṭuiǵ</i> , exert
<i>cuairt</i> , a visit	<i>cuairtuıǵ</i> , visit, search
<i>leap</i> , improvement	<i>leapuıǵ</i> , improve
<i>neart</i> , strength	<i>neartuıǵ</i> , strengthen
<i>dect</i> , a decree	<i>dectuıǵ</i> , decree, enact
<i>báir</i> , death	<i>báiruıǵ</i> , put to death
<i>caṭ</i> , a battle	<i>caṭuıǵ</i> , contend, fight
<i>céim</i> , a step	<i>céimnıǵ</i> , step, advance
<i>crioṇ</i> , an end	<i>crioṇnuıǵ</i> , finish
<i>criṭ</i> , a trembling	<i>criṭuıǵ</i> , tremble

## NOUN.

ζορτα, hunger, injury
ιοματο, multitude
ορτο, an order
ροτup, a light
τυp (τοp), a beginning
τρεοip, a guide
πιαν, pain
οβαip, work

## VERB (Stem).

ζοpτuιg, injure
ιοματουιg, multiply
οpτουιg, order, command
ροτtuιg, enlighten
τοpυιg, begin
τρεοpυιg, guide, lead
πιανυιg, cause pain
οιbυιg, work

## (b). Verbs derived from Adjectives.

## ADJECTIVE.

αpτο, high
βαν, white
ουb, black
βοοαρ, deaf
βuan, lasting
ποτtuρ, apparent
puαρ, cold
ταg, weak
pταν, well
τιpum, dry
βοοct, poor
ceαρt, right
μιν, fine
ipιot, low
uμat, humble
paiρoθip, rich

## VERB (Stem).

αpτουιg, raise
βανυιg, whiten
ουbυιg, blacken
βοοpυιg, deafen, bother
βuanυιg, preserve
ποτtuιg, reveal, show
puαpυιg, cool, chill
ταgυιg, weaken
pτανυιg, make well, cure
τιοpμυιg, or τpumιg, dry
βοοctυιg, impoverish
ceαρtυιg, correct
μινιg, make fine, <i>explain</i>
ipιιg, lower
uμtuιg, humble
paiρoθpυιg, enrich

The compound verbs are very few, and are therefore of little consequence to the beginner.

### **PART III.—SYNTAX,**

#### **CHAPTER I.**

##### **The Article.**

**470.** In Irish the article always precedes its noun, and agrees with it in gender, number and case as, *an fear*, the man; *na fir*, the men; *an fear*, of the man; *na mná*, of the woman.

**471.** When one noun governs another in the genitive case the article cannot be used with the first noun: as, *mac an fear*, the son of the man; *fear an tí*, the man of the house, &c.

Notice the difference between *the son of the man*, *mac an fear*, and *a son of the man*, *mac do'n fear*.

**Exceptions.** (1) When a demonstrative adjective is used with the first noun (the governing one), the article must also be used; as, *tá an teach sin mo chara le díol*, that house of my friend's is for sale.

(2) If the two nouns form a compound word, the article is used before the first, if used in English: a newspaper, *páipear nuairéada*; but, the newspaper, *an páipear nuairéada*.



(3) When the noun in the genitive case is an indefinite\* one, *which denotes a part of something, the material of which a thing is made, or the contents of the first noun*, the article is used with the first noun when it is used in English :—

an spem aráin, the piece of bread.

an mála mine, the bag of meal.

an cúbúirgín uirge, the little jug of water.

We say *blar aráin*, for, the taste of bread ; *bolat éirg*, the smell of fish ; *mac ríog*, the son of a king ; because if the noun in the genitive expresses quality, connection, or origin, the governing noun does not take the article.

**472.** If a nominative be followed by several genitives the article can be used only with the last (if “the” be used in English), as, *truime cinn an capailt*, the weight of the horse’s head.

The article is often omitted before a noun which is antecedent to a relative clause ; as, *Is é tóime do bhin*. He is the person who was there.

**473.** In the following cases the definite article is frequently used in Irish though not used in English.

(1) **Before surnames**, when not preceded by a Christian name, as, *Raib an Uíreachtáin* ? Was Walsh there ?

---

\* See par. 585.

(2) **Before the names of some countries, as,** an Spáinn, Spain; an Fhrainc, France; ní na h-Éireann, the king of Ireland: also before Rome, 'r'an Róim, in Rome; ó'n Róim, from Rome. **The article is not used before the names of Ireland, England or Scotland in the nominative and dative cases.**

(3) **Before abstract nouns:** an t-ocrap, hunger. Ir maít an t-annlann an t-ocrap. Hunger is a good sauce.

We frequently use an báir for "death."

The article is not used in such sentences, as:—

Tá ocrap orm. I am hungry.

(4) **Before nouns qualified by the demonstrative adjectives:** an fear sin, that man; an bean ro, this woman.

(5) **Before adjectives used as nouns:**

an maít agus an t-olc, goodness and badness.

Ir fearr uim an glar ná an dearg. I prefer green to red.

(6) **After "Cé" meaning "which" or "what."**

Cé an fear? Which man?

Cé an leabhar? What book?

(7) **To translate "apiece," "per" or "a" before words expressing weight and measure;**

Raol an ceann. Sixpence apiece.

In speaking of *a period of time* r'a (inr an) is used: as, uair r'a mbliadain, once a year.

## (8). Before titles :

Δη τ-αῖαιρ Εοῖαν ὕα ῤαμνα. Father Eugene O'Growney.

Δη τ-αῖαιρ Ρεαοαρ ὕα Λαοῖαιρε. Father Peter O'Leary.

Δη τοῖτῦιρ Όυβῖλαρ Όε η-ίρε. Dr. Douglas Hyde.

## (9) To express any attribute :

Δ ὕεαν ηα ὀτρί μβό. O woman of three cows.

(10) The article is used before the word denoting the use to which a thing is put, or the place where a thing is found or produced.

μάλα ηα μινε. The meal bag, *i.e.*, the bag for holding meal.

Crúirḡín δη υἱῖε. The water-jug.

Compare these with the following :—

Δη μάλα μινε. The bag of meal.

Δη crúirḡín υἱῖε. The jug of water.

## (11) Before the word "uite" meaning "every."

Δη uite ḡεαρ. Every man.

Δη uite ḡίρ. Every country.

(12) Whenever an indefinite noun, accompanied by an adjective is predicated of a pronoun by means of the verb *ir*, the definite article must be used with the noun whenever the adjective is placed immediately after the verb.

*ir* bpeáḡ δη τά ε. It is a fine day.

*ir* maic δη ḡεαρ tú. You are a good man.

(13) Before the names of seasons, months, days of the week (when not preceded by the word *roé*).

Δη ε αν Σατταρη ατά αζαρηη? Is to-day Saturday?

Δη ηηθηηη αν λυαν? } Is this Monday?  
 Δη ε ρεο αν λυαν? }

ηηθηηη αν Δοηηη. To-day is Friday.

## CHAPTER II

### The Noun.

**474.** In Irish one noun governs another in the genitive case, and the governed noun comes after the governing one.

Ceann an capaitt. The horse's head.

The noun, *capaitt*, in the genitive case is aspirated by the article because it is masculine gender. It would not be aspirated if it were feminine. (See par. 40.)

**475.** When the governed noun in the genitive is a proper name it is generally aspirated, whether it be masculine or feminine, although the article is not used.

Peann mÁire. Mary's pen.

Leabhar Séagáin. John's book.

The last rule is by no means generally true of *place names*.

**476.** When the noun in genitive case has the force of an adjective, it is not preceded by the article, but its initial consonant is subject to precisely the same rules, with regard to aspiration and eclipsis, as if it were a simple adjective, *i.e.*, it is aspirated if the governing noun be nominative or accusative singular feminine, or genitive singular masculine. It is eclipsed if the governing noun be in the genitive plural.

uð éirce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen)

uibe éirce, of a hen-egg.

féar ceoil, a musician.

fíar éoil, of a musician.

na bféar sceoil, of the musicians.

**477. Apposition** has almost entirely disappeared in modern Irish, **the second noun being now usually in the nominative case**, no matter what the case of the first may be.

**478. A noun used adjectively in English is translated into Irish by the genitive case.**

A gold ring, fáinne óir (lit. a ring of gold).

A hen-egg, uð éirce.

Oatmeal, mín éoirce.

**479. Collective nouns** (except in their own plurals) always take the article and qualifying adjectives in the singular; they *sometimes* take a plural pronoun, and may take a plural verb.

Ṫánḡaṭḡar an buíṭean cupaṭ rin ṭo láṭar ṫinn aḡur  
ṭo beannuḡ ríao ṭó. That company of warriors  
came into the presence of Finn, and saluted him  
(lit. to him).

**480. Nouns denoting fulness or a part of anything**  
are usually followed by the preposition *ṭe* and the  
dative case, but the genitive is also used.

ceann (or ḡaṭar) ṭ'ár nḡaṭraíṭ, one of our hounds.  
bárr mo ṫróḡe, the top of my shoe.  
lán mo ṫuirn, the full of my fist.

In phrases such as "some of us," "one of them,"  
&c., "of us," "of them," &c., are usually translated  
by aḡainn, aca, &c.; but ṭínn, ṭíoṭ, &c., may also be  
used.

**481. The personal numerals** from ṭiar to ṭárneḡ  
inclusive (see par. 177) **generally take their nouns**  
**in the genitive plural**: beirt mac, two sons; naonṭar  
reap, nine men (lit. two of sons, nine of men).

Δ ṫriúr mac aḡur Δ ṫṫriúr ban.

His three sons and their three wives.

**482. When used partitively they take** *ṭe* **with the**  
**dative.**

ṫáíṭ ré naonṭar ṫíoṭ rá 'n loṭ.

He drowned nine of them under the lake.

naoi naonṭar ṭe máoraíṭ na h-Éíreann.

Nine times nine of the stewards of Erin.



## Personal Nouns.

**483.** An Irish name consists of two parts, the *anm-bairtíor* (or simply *anm*), which corresponds to the English Christian name, and the *riomneas*, the surname or family name.

Surnames were first used in Ireland about the eleventh century: until that time every Irish personal name was significant, and sometimes rendered more so by the application of some epithet. "In the early ages individuals received their names from epithets implying some personal peculiarity, such as colour of hair, complexion, size, figure, certain accidents of deformity, mental qualities, such as bravery, fierceness, &c." Joyce's "Irish Names of Places."

**484.** When the Christian name is used in addressing a person, it is always in the vocative case, and preceded by the particle *á*, which causes aspiration, *e.g.* :

*Fá*n *u*om, *á* *Seagáin*. Wait for me, John.

*Dia* *ó*uit, *á* *Seumair*. Good morning, James.

**485.** When the Christian name is in the genitive case, it is aspirated, *e.g.* :

*Leab*ar *má*ire. Mary's book.

*Sgá*in *Seo*ire. George's knife.

**486.** Surnames when not preceded by a Christian name usually take the termination *áC*, which has the force of a patronymic (or father-name), and are declined like *maireac* (par. 57). They are usually preceded by the article except in the vocative case: *an* *pá*orac, Power; *capall* *an* *Ó*rianaidís, O'Brien's horse



Two forms are admissible in the vocative case; facility of pronunciation is the best guide, *e.g.*, *Ṣab 1 teit, a Ṗrianais.* Come here, O'Brien. *a míc uí laogáipe, O'Leary.* *a míc uí Súibne, MacSweeney.*

**487.** Surnames occurring in Ireland to-day are of three classes: (1) Surnames of Gaelic origin. These in almost every instance have the prefix *Ó (ua)* or *mac* for a male, and *ní* or *níc* for a female. (2) Surnames of old foreign origin. The majority of these have no prefix. (3) Surnames of late foreign origin. Only a few of these have acquired a distinct form, pronounced in an Irish way.

**488.** When the surname is preceded by any of the words *Ó (ua)*, *mac*, *ní*, *níc*, the surname is in the genitive case, and is aspirated after *ní* or *níc*, but not after *Ó* or *mac*: *e.g.*, *Seagán mac 'Domnaill*, John McDonnell; *máire ní 'Conaill*, Mary O'Connell; *'Diarmuid Ó Conaill*, Dermot O'Connell; *nóra níc 'Domnaill*, Nora McDonnell.

**489.** When the whole name is in the genitive case, the words after *uí* (gen. of *Ó* or *ua*) and *míc* (gen. of *mac*) are aspirated; *ní* and *níc* do not change in genitive. *leabhar Seumair uí 'Briain*, James O'Brien's book; *bó 'Briain míc 'Domnaill*, Brian McDonnell's cow.

**490.** *mac* and *Ó* aspirate when they really mean "son" and "grandson" respectively.

MAC DÓMNAID, Donal's son.

MAC DÓMNAID, McDonnell.

Ó BÉIDIN, Brian's grandson.

Ó BÉIDIN, O'Brien.

491. Some surnames take the article after *mac* and *nic*—*e.g.*:

SEUMAR MAC AN BÉID, James Ward.

NÓRA NIC AN ULTAIGH, Nora McNulty.

## CHAPTER III.

### The Adjective.

492. An adjective may be used either **predicatively** or **attributively**. An adjective is used *predicatively* when it is predicated of a noun by a verb, and in this case it is *usually* separated from the noun by the verb. "The way was *long*, the wind was *cold*." "The day is *fine*." "He made the mantles *green*." "Long," "cold," "fine," and "green" are used *predicatively*. An adjective is used *attributively* whenever it is not separated from the noun by the verb, and is not predicated of a noun by a verb: as, "The *infirm old* minstrel went wearily along." "He made the *green* mantles." The adjectives "*infirm*," "*old*," and "*green*" are here used *attributively*.

493. In Irish almost every common adjective can be used both predicatively and attributively. There are, however, one or two exceptions: *roíoch*, bad, and *deas*, good, can *never* be used predicatively. If “bad” or “good” be used predicatively in the English sentence, we must use *oíche*, bad, or *maire*, good, in Irish. Never say or write *is deas é* for “he is good,” but *is maire é*, &c.

The adjective *ıomɔΔ* is always used predicatively with *ır*. In Munster *'mō* is used instead of *ıomɔΔ*.

1r 10mṓḏ mḏṛcḏ ṓḑ ṣḏḅ ḏn ṣṛlṣḕ ṛeo.

(’Tis) many a rider (that) has gone this way.

### ADJECTIVE USED ATTRIBUTIVELY.

### (a) The Position of the Adjective.

**494. As a general rule the adjective follows its noun**  
in Irish: as, *teabhar mór*, a big book; *fear maí*, a  
good man.

**Exceptions.** (1) A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, always precedes its noun: as τρεῖς βόα, three cows; δύο ἄιτες, two hens. The *interrogative*, *possessive*, and most of the *indefinite adjectives* also precede their noun.

(2) Monosyllabic adjectives are frequently placed before the noun, but then the noun and adjective form a compound noun, and consequently the initial of the noun is aspirated, when possible. This is

always the case with adjectives: *ṽeaḡ*, good; *ṽroḡ*, bad; *ṽean*, old; and frequently with *nuad̃*, new; and *ṽior*, true. In this position the form of the adjectives never changes for number or case, but it is subject to the very same initial changes as if it were a noun.

*ṽean-ṽean*, an old man; *ṽean-ṽir*, old men.  
*ṽreun-ṽean*, a brave man; *ḡro-ṽí*, a high king.  
*an ṽrean-ṽean*, the old woman;  
*lám an ṽrean-ṽir*, the hand of the old man.

(3) When a name consists of two words the adjective frequently comes between them: as, "*Suaḡ ḡeat ḡCua*," "the bright Slieve Gua."

### (b) Agreement of the Adjective.

When an adjective is used attributively and follows its noun, it agrees with the noun in gender, number, and case: as, *ḡean ṽóir*, a big woman; *mac an ṽir ṽóir*, the son of the big man; *na ṽir ṽóira*, the big men.

For the aspiration and eclipsis of the adjective see par. 149.

**495.** Since the adjective in English has no inflexion for gender, it is quite a common thing to have one adjective qualifying two or more nouns of different genders. Sometimes in Irish we meet with one adjective qualifying two nouns of different genders or numbers; in such cases the adjective follows the

latter noun, and agrees with it alone. However, the more usual method is to use the adjective after each noun: as,

բար մալ՝ աջար ԲԵԱՆ մալ՝.  
A good man and woman.

## ADJECTIVE USED PREDICATIVELY.

### (a) Position of the Adjective.

**496.** An adjective used predicatively always follows its noun, except when it is predicated by means of the verb ԻՏ, in any of its forms, expressed or understood.

The men are good, Ե՛ձ նա բար մալ՝.

The day is fine, Ե՛ձ ան Լ՛ձ ԲԵԱՃՃ.

If the verb ԻԲ be used in these sentences, notice the position of the adjective and the use of the pronoun.

The men are good, ԻԲ մալ՝ նա բար ԼԱԾ.

The day is fine, ԻԲ ԲԵԱՃՃ ան Լ՛ձ Ե.

### (b) Agreement of the Adjective.

**An adjective used predicatively never agrees with its noun** in either gender, number, or case: in other words, *the simple form of the adjective is always used.*

Moreover, it is never aspirated nor eclipsed by the noun.

**497.** When the adjective comes immediately after the Past Tense or Conditional of ԻԲ (*i.e.*, ԵՅ or ԵՍԾ),

its initial is generally aspirated, when possible; but in this case it is not the noun which causes aspiration.

Ḃa ḃpeáḡ an tá é. It was a fine day.

**498.** Notice the difference in meaning between the following :—

Rinne ré na rḡeana ḡeupa He made the sharp knives.

Rinne ré ḡeup na rḡeana }  
Rinne ré na rḡeana ḡeup } He made the knives sharp.

Tá an ḃó móp ouḃ. The big cow is black.

Tá an ḃó ouḃ móp. The black cow is big.

Tá an oróce ḡoréa rḡiué. The night is dark and wet.

Tá an oróce rḡiué ḡoréa. The wet night is dark.

**499.** Adjectives denoting fulness or a part of anything are usually followed by *oe* with the dative case :

full of milk, tán *oe* ḃainne.

two barrels full of water, tá ḃapate tán *o'* uirḡe.

## NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

### Position of the Words.

**500.** A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, goes before the noun.

ceirpe capaiti, four horses; ré caoirḡ, six sheep.

an céuḃ buacaiti, the first boy.

The words for 40, 60, 80, 200, 300, &c., also precede their nouns.



**501. A numeral adjective**, except those just mentioned, **consisting of two or more words**, takes its **noun immediately after the first part of the numeral**: as,

ceitíre capaitt deug, fourteen horses.

ṑá uan deug, twelve lambs.

ṑá buin deug ir trí fícró, seventy-two cows.

**502. When we wish to express large numbers in Irish**, we may either place the unit digit first, then the tens, next the hundreds, and so on; or we may express them in the English order. Convenience for utterance and clearness of sense are the best guides in any particular case.

The word **ΔΣΥΣ** is generally used with the larger numbers **ḐÉAD**, **míle**, etc., and **IS** with the smaller ones.

129 miles, **ḐÉAD** (míle) Δσυρ naoi míle fícró.

79 horses, naoi gcapaitt ṑéas ir trí fícró.

5,635 men, cúig míle Δσυρ ré ḐÉAD fear Δσυρ cúig fícró ṑéas ar fícró.

356 sheep, ré caoiríḡ ṑéas ir ṑá fícró Δσυρ (ar) trí ḐÉAD.

1,666 years, ré bliadóna ir trí fícró Δσυρ (ar) ré ḐÉAD Δσυρ (ar) míle.

519 A.D., aoir ṑo'n tigeapina cúig ḐÉAD Δσυρ naoi ṑéas.

52,000 of the Roman army, ṑá míle ṑéas ir ṑá fícró míle de ítuaḡ Rómánaḑ.



**More than 400 years,** τυττε(αὐ) (ὅπερ) ἀγυρ  
 ceitpe céαὐ βλιαῶαιν.

**About 80,** τυαιῖμ τε (or τιμῆαι τε) ceitpe picro.

„ ἴτ „ „ ἴτ „ „

The word *ritge* is often added to make it clear that *miles* not *thousands* is meant. Sé mite *ritge*, or pé mite [œ] *ritge*, *six miles*.

**503.** The initials of the numerals undergo the very same changes with regard to aspiration and eclipsis as a noun would in the same position.

**504.** The article prefixes τ to ἀονῖαὐ, first, and to οὔτῖαὐ, eighth, whether the following noun be masculine or feminine: as,

ἀν τ-οὔτῖαὐ βεαν, the eighth woman.

### Initial Changes produced by the Numerals.

**505.** Ἀον, one; ὁά, two; ceυῖ, first; and τρεαρ, third, aspirate the initial of the following word: as,

ἀον ὁό ἀῖαῖν, one cow; ἀν ceυῖ ῖεαρ, the first man.

**506.** Ἀον, prefixes τ to the letter ρ; but has no effect on ο or τ: ἀον ἀρατ ἀῖαῖν, one ass; ἀον ῥορ ἀῖαῖν, one foot; ἀον τραγαρτ ἀῖαῖν, one priest; ἀον τριλατ ἀῖαῖν, one rod; ἀον τρεαῖατ ἀῖαῖν, one hawk; ὁά ῖεαῖατ, two hawks; ἀον ταοῖ ἀῖαῖν, one side.

**507.** Σεαῖτ, seven; οὔτ, eight; ναοῖ, nine; and βειῖ, ten; and their compounds eclipse the initial

of the following noun and prefix **n** to vowels; **ρεάκτ** **mba**, seven cows; **δεῖς n-uβla**, ten apples.

**508.** **τρί**, **ceṛpe**, **cuṡ** and **ré** have usually no effect on consonants (except **ceuro**, 100, and **mīle**, 1000); but **τρί**, **ceṛpe**, **ré**, and **ῥαῖα** prefix **n** to vowels: as, **τρί ba**, three cows; **τρί n-apail**, three asses; **ré n-uβla**, six apples; **ῥαν ῥαῖα n-áit**, in the second place; **τρί ceuro**, 300; **ceṛpe mīle**, 4000.

**τρί**, **ceṛpe**, **cuṡ** and **ré** (as well as **ρεάκτ**, **οἶκτ**, &c.), cause eclipsis in the genitive plural: **ἄ βεαν na ῥτρί mḃó**. *O woman of three cows!* **τεῦᾶς ceṛpe bpúnt** *four pound's worth*.

### The Number of the Noun after the Numerals.

**509.** The noun after **ἄον** is always in the singular, even in such numbers as 11, 21, 31, 41, &c. The other numerals (except **ῥᾶ**) may take the singular number when unity of idea is expressed: e.g., **ἄον uβail ῥέας**, *eleven apples*; **ῥεσῖμας ré ap na τρί buille ῥουαῶς**. *He forgot to strike the three blows*.

**510.** When a noun has two forms in the plural, a short form and a long one, the short form is preferred after the numerals: as

**ἔας n-uáipe**, nine times; **ἔας naḃi n-uáipeannṫa**.

**511.** In Modern Irish the numerals **ḃíce**, 20; **ῥᾶ ḃícro**, 40, &c., **ceuro**, 100; **mīle**, 1,000, are regarded as simple numeral adjectives which take the noun after them in the singular number.

**512.** This peculiar construction has arisen from the fact that these numerals are really *nouns*, and formerly governed the nouns after them in the *genitive plural*. As the genitive plural of most Irish nouns has exactly the same form as the nominative singular, the singular form has come to be almost universally used in Modern Irish after these numerals. Formerly they would use ceuro ban and píce caora, but now we use ceuro bean and píce caora.

**513.** The word ceann and its plural cinn are often used with numerals *when the noun is not expressed in English*: as, Ca mbeo (an'mó) leabhar aḡat? Tá ód ceann deug aḡam. How many books have you? I have twelve.

Tá ceann (or duine) aca inḡ an tíḡ.  
There is one of them in the house.

### The Dual Number.

**514.** Ód, "two," always takes the noun after it in the dual number (neither singular nor plural), which in every Irish noun has the same form as the dative singular. This does not at all imply that the noun after ód is in the dative case. It is in the *dative singular form*, but it may be in any of the five cases, according to its use in the sentence. **All the cases of the dual number are alike, but the form of the genitive plural is often used for the genitive dual:** ód buin, two cows; ód ḡaḃainn, two smiths; lán a ód lám or lán a ód lám, the full of his two hands.

**515.** The article which qualifies a noun in the dual number will always be in the singular form.

**516.** The adjective which qualifies a noun in the dual number will be in the plural form, but really in the dual number; the pronouns belonging to the noun will be in the plural form; and the verb may, but need not be; because in these parts of speech the dual number and the plural number have the same forms.

**517.** The initial of an adjective\* qualifying and agreeing with a noun in the dual number will be aspirated, no matter what the gender or case of the noun may be: as,

ṛā́ ṭiḡ ṛeuḡ,	twelve houses.
an ṛā́ láim̃ bána,	the two white hands.
lán a ṛā́ láim̃ beaḡ,	the full of her two little hands.

**518.** The ṛ of ṛā́ is usually aspirated, except after words ending in ṛ, n, ṭ, ṭ, r (dentals), or after the possessive adjective a, her.

a ṛā́ cōiṛ beaḡa,      her two little feet.

---

\* Except demonstrative, possessive, indefinite, and interrogative adjectives.

### The Possessive Adjective.

**519.** A possessive adjective can never be used without a noun: as, her father and his,  $\Delta$   $n$ - $\Delta\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$   $\Delta\zeta\upsilon\tau$   $\Delta$   $\Delta\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$ .

**520.** The possessive adjectives always precede their nouns: as, mo  $m\acute{\alpha}\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$ , my mother.

**521.** The possessives mo, my;  $\tau\omicron$ , thy; and  $\Delta$ , his, aspirate the initial of their nouns;  $\acute{\alpha}\tau$ , our;  $\beta\upsilon\tau$ , your; and  $\Delta$ , their, cause eclipsis: as,  $\Delta$   $\tau\acute{\omicron}\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , his poem;  $\tau\omicron$   $m\acute{\alpha}\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$ , thy mother;  $\Delta$   $\tau\acute{\omicron}\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , her poem;  $\Delta$   $n\tau\acute{\omicron}\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , their poem.

**522.** If a noun begins with a vowel, mo, my, and  $\tau\omicron$ , thy, become  $m'$  and  $\tau'$  ( $\tau$  or  $\epsilon$ );  $\Delta$ , his, has no effect;  $\Delta$ , her, prefixes  $n$ ; and  $\Delta$ , their, prefixes  $n$ ;  $\acute{\alpha}\tau$ , our, and  $\beta\upsilon\tau$ , your, also prefix  $n$  to vowels: as,  $\Delta$   $\Delta\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$ , his father;  $\Delta$   $n$ - $\Delta\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$ , her father;  $\Delta$   $n$ - $\Delta\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$ , their father;  $m'\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\tau$ , my husband;  $\tau'\epsilon\upsilon\eta$ , your bird;  $\acute{\alpha}\tau$   $n$ - $\alpha\pi\acute{\alpha}\eta$   $\iota\alpha\epsilon\epsilon\alpha\mu\acute{\alpha}\iota$ , our daily bread;  $\beta\upsilon\tau$   $n$ - $\alpha\beta\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , your song.

**523.** The possessive adjectives, when compounded with prepositions (see par. 186), have the same influence over the initials of their nouns as they have in their uncompounded state: as,  $\tau\omicron\omicron m$   $m\acute{\alpha}\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau$ , to my mother;  $\omicron m$   $\epsilon\iota\tau$ , from my country.

**524.** When the portion of a thing which belongs to one or more persons is to be expressed by the possessive adjectives, the name of the thing is preceded by *curo*, with the possessive adjective before it. The name of the thing is in the genitive case—genitive singular if *quantity* be implied, but genitive plural if *number*—as, my bread, *mo curo aráin* (lit. my share of bread); his wine, *a curo fiona*; their horses, *a gcuro capall*.

This rule is not always followed; for instance, we sometimes find *m'fion*, my wine; but *mo curo fiona* is more idiomatic.

**525.** The word *curo* is never used in this way before the name of a single object.

*mo leabhar*, my book; *a gcapall*, their horse.

*a leabhar*, his book; but *a curo leabhar*, his books.

*a bó*, her cow; *a curo bó*, her cows.

**526.** The word *curo* is not used in such phrases as *mo cora*, my feet; *mo fúite*, my eyes; *a cnáma*, his bones, &c.

**527.** When the emphatic suffix is used, some make it follow *curo*; others make it follow the noun: as, *mo curo-re aráin* or *mo curo aráin-re*.



## CHAPTER IV.

## THE PRONOUN.

## Personal Pronoun.

**528.** The personal pronouns agree with the nouns for which they stand in gender, number and person: as, He is a big man. *1r mór an fear é.* They are big men. *1r mór na fir iad.*

**529.** A personal pronoun which stands for a noun the gender of which is different from its sex, agrees in gender with the sex of the noun; as, *1r maic an catín í.* She is a good girl. *1r olc an comuinn é.* He is a bad neighbour.

**530.** In Irish we have no neuter pronoun corresponding to the English "it;" hence, in translating "it," we must determine the gender of the Irish noun (masculine or feminine) and then use *ré* (he) or *rí* (she) accordingly: \* as, It is terrible weather. *1r caillte an ainmín í.* Is to-day Friday? *An í an Doine atá agaim?* 'Tob í an pípinne í. It was the truth. *Tá an carúr agam, ní fuil ré trom.* I have the hammer, it is not heavy.

---

\* The word *áit* although feminine takes sometimes a masculine pronoun, as, *1r fear an áit é.* It is a nice place.

Notice also—

*1r é* }  
     or } *mo bairiáir. mo tuairim, &c.* It is my opinion, &c., &c.  
*1r í* }



**531.** The pronoun *tú*, thou, is always used to translate the English "you" when only one person is referred to; as, How are you? *Cionnair tú tú?* What a man you are! *Naé tú an fear!*

**532.** The personal pronouns, whether nominative or accusative, always come after the verb; as, *molann ré tú*, he praises you.

**533.** The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used immediately after the verb 1S in any of its forms expressed or understood; as, *ir é an fear láidir é*. He is a strong man. *An é a fuair é?* Was it he who found it? *Naé í 'o' mḡean í?* Is she not your daughter?

**534.** A personal pronoun which stands for a sentence, or part of a sentence, is third person singular, masculine gender. *An fuo doibairt mé, ir é doirim air.* What I said, I repeat.

**535.** The accusative personal pronoun usually comes last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs: as, *O'fás ré ar an áit rin iad.* He left them at that place. *Rug ré leir míle eile é.* He brought it with him another mile. *O'fásar im oiair é.* I left it after me.

### Relative Pronoun.

**536.** The relative particle follows its antecedent and precedes its verb: as, *an fear a coitléas,* the man who will sleep.

**537.** The relative particle, whether expressed or understood, always causes aspiration : as, an fear fear ag obair, the man who will be at work.

**538.** The relative when preceded by a preposition causes eclipsis (unless the verb be in the Past Tense). When the relative a signifies “all that” or “what” it causes eclipsis : as, an áit i n-a b-fuit ré, the place in which he is ; a b-fuit i mBáite-áta-Cúat, all that is in Dublin.

**539.** When the relative is governed by a preposition and followed by a verb in the Past Tense, the relative combines with po (the old sign of the Past Tense), and does not eclipse : an áit ar éuit doó, the place where (in which) Hugh fell.

**540.** The eight verbs which do not admit of the compounds of po being used before them (see par. 279) form an exception to the last rule : as, an tír i n-a tairinis ré, the country into which he came.

**541.** In English, when the relative or interrogative pronoun is governed by a preposition, the pronoun very often comes before the governing word : as, *What are you speaking about ? The man that he gave the book to is here.* In colloquial Irish it is a very common practice to separate the relative particle from the preposition which governs it ; but instead of using a simple preposition at the end of the sentence, as in English, we use a **prepositional pronoun**. Thus we

can say—*an fear aḡ a bfuil an bó*, or more usually, *an fear a bfuil an bó aḡe*,\* the man who has the cow; *an fear ar òiolar an capall leir*, or *an fear leir òiolar an capall*, the man to whom I sold the horse.

**542.** The forms *ṽarṽ* or *ṽarab*, *ṽarṽ*, *leṽ*, *marṽ*, &c., are compounds of a preposition, relative particle; “*ro*,” the sign of the Past Tense; and *ba* or *buṽ* the Past Tense of *ir*.

*ṽarṽ* = *ro* + *a* + *ro* + *ba* = to whom was.

*leṽ* = *le* + *a* + *ro* + *ba* = with or by whom was.

*as, bean ṽarṽ ainm Brigid*, a woman whose name was Brigid.

**543.** As the accusative case of the relative particle has exactly the same form as the nominative, the context must determine, in those tenses in which the verb has no distinct termination for the relative, whether the relative particle is the subject or object of the verb; *an fear a buail Seagán*, may mean, The man whom John struck, or The man who struck John.

### Translation of the Genitive Case of the English Relative.

**544.** The Irish relative has no inflection for case; hence, in order to translate the English word “whose”

---

\* *An fear aḡ a bfuil an bó aḡe* is also used.

when not an interrogative, we must use one of the prepositions (a, o, i) + relative particle + possessive adjective (before the noun).

The man whose son was sick.

$$\text{an fear} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{o} \dot{\text{a}} \\ \text{a} \dot{\text{s}} \dot{\text{a}} \\ \text{i} \text{ n-a} \end{array} \right\} \text{ naib} \text{ a} \text{ mac} \text{ tinn.}$$

but o $\dot{\text{a}}$ , a $\dot{\text{s}}\dot{\text{a}}$ , or 's $\dot{\text{a}}$ , i n-a are often shortened to a, so, and 'na; hence the above sentence in colloquial Irish would be—

$$\text{an fear} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{a} \\ \text{so} \\ \text{'na} \end{array} \right\} \text{ naib} \text{ a} \text{ mac} \text{ tinn.}$$

The woman whose son is sick visited us yesterday.

$$\text{an bean} \text{ u} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{so} \\ \text{'s} \dot{\text{a}} \\ \text{\&c.} \end{array} \right\} \text{ bfuil} \text{ a} \text{ mac} \text{ tinn} \text{ t} \dot{\text{a}} \text{in} \text{is} \text{ r} \dot{\text{i}} \\ \text{a} \text{r} \text{ eua} \text{it} \text{ in} \text{o} \dot{\text{e}} \text{ eua} \text{inn.}$$

545. To translate the English relative pronoun when governed by an active participle, we employ a somewhat similar construction; as—

The hare that the hounds are pursuing.

An siurfia $\dot{\text{o}}$  so bfuil na s $\dot{\text{a}}$  $\dot{\text{o}}$ a $\dot{\text{i}}$ r a $\dot{\text{i}}$  a lo $\dot{\text{i}}$ s (or a $\dot{\text{i}}$  a t $\dot{\text{o}}$ i $\dot{\text{r}}$ , or a $\dot{\text{s}}$  t $\dot{\text{o}}$ ma $\dot{\text{i}}$ s $\dot{\text{e}}$ a $\dot{\text{c}}$ t a $\dot{\text{i}}$ r).

The man whom I am striking.

An fear a $\dot{\text{c}}$  $\dot{\text{a}}$  a $\dot{\text{s}}$ a $\dot{\text{i}}$ m 'a (o' a, s $\dot{\text{a}}$ ) bua $\dot{\text{a}}$ a $\dot{\text{o}}$ .

**546.** The relative  $\alpha$  meaning *all that, what*, may itself be genitive; as,  $\tau\pi\iota\alpha\alpha\ \alpha\ \pi\alpha\iota\theta\ \alpha\alpha\alpha$ , a third of what were there. “ $\theta\epsilon\iota\pi\ \beta\epsilon\alpha\alpha\alpha\alpha\epsilon\tau\ \acute{o}\mu\ \acute{\epsilon}\pi\omicron\iota\theta\epsilon\ \acute{\epsilon}\mu\ \alpha\ \mu\alpha\iota\pi\epsilon\alpha\alpha\alpha\ \alpha\pi\ \beta\acute{\alpha}\nu\acute{\epsilon}\nu\omicron\iota\varsigma\ \acute{\epsilon}\pi\epsilon\alpha\alpha\alpha\ \acute{o}\iota\zeta$ .” “Bear a blessing from my heart to all those who live on the fair hills of Holy Ireland.”

The relative  $\alpha$  in this sentence is genitive case being governed by  $\acute{\epsilon}\mu$  (see par. 603).

## CHAPTER V.

### The Verb.

**547.** As a general rule the verb precedes its **nominative**: as,  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\ \rho\acute{\epsilon}$ , he is;  $\upsilon\acute{\iota}\ \alpha\alpha\ \pi\epsilon\alpha\pi\ \alpha\alpha\alpha$ , the man was there.

**Exceptions.** (1) When the subject is a relative or an interrogative pronoun the verb comes after its subject; as,

$\alpha\alpha\ \beta\upsilon\alpha\acute{\alpha}\alpha\iota\iota\ \alpha\ \beta\upsilon\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon\alpha\pi\ \mu\acute{\epsilon}$ . The boy who strikes me.  
 $\epsilon\alpha\theta\ \alpha\tau\acute{\alpha}\ \alpha\zeta\alpha\tau$ ? What have you?

(2) In a relative sentence the nominative though not a relative pronoun may precede its verb; but as the noun is usually far separated from the verb, a

personal pronoun is used as a sort of temporary subject, so that really the noun and its pronoun are nominative to the same verb: as,

An fear atá 'na fearainn ag an doras buail pé an capall. The man who is standing at the door struck the horse.

Compare the similar use of the French pronoun *ce*; or the English "He that shall persevere unto the end, *he* shall be saved."

(3) The nominative often precedes its verb in poetry, and sometimes even in prose.

Raí go raib ort! Success to you!

**548. Transitive verbs govern the accusative case; and the usual order of words is, Verb, Subject, Object.** When the subject or object is a relative or an interrogative pronoun it precedes the verb.

Do rinne Seagán an báid sin. John made that boat.

Do buail an buachaill é. The boy struck him.

For the conditions under which a verb is aspirated or eclipsed, see pars. 21(g) and 26(e).

### Use of the Subjunctive Mood.

**549. The most frequent use of the present subjunctive is with the conjunction SO, expressing a wish. If the wish be negative use NÁR (except with raib).**



Σο mbeannuigirò Dia òuit !	May God bless you !
Σο bpròirò Dia orainn !	God help us !
Σο otéig tú rlan !	Safe home ! (may you go safely) !
hár léigirò Dia rin !	May God not allow that ! God forbid !
Σο paid maic agat !	Thank you !
hà paid maic agat !	No thanks to you !

**550.** The subjunctive is also used after **hó** Σο, Σο or Δέτ Σο, all meaning “until”; and after **muna**, “unless,” but only when there is an element of doubt.

fan annro Σο otagao air. Stay here till I come again.
Muna scpeirò rib mé. Unless you believe me.
Muna otugairò tú an Unless you give me the
τ-aipegao dom. money.

**551.** **su** Δ, **su** ρΔ, **su** mÁ, **su** oÁ, all meaning “before,” when used with reference to an event not considered as an actual occurrence, take the subjunctive; as,

Imtig leat ru Δ otagairò an maigirtir. Be off with you, before the master comes.

**552.** The past subjunctive is found after **oÁ** or **muna** to express a supposed condition. They may also take a conditional. In translating the English phrases “if he believed,” “if he had believed” (im-



plying that he did not believe), we use  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  with the past subjunctive; but as this Tense is identical in form with the Imperfect Tense, it may be said that it is the Imperfect Tense which is employed in this case.

If you were to see Donal on the following day  
you would pity him.

$\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\beta\rho\epsilon\iota\sigma\tau\epsilon\acute{\alpha}$   $\tau\omicron\mu\eta\alpha\iota\iota$   $\Delta\eta$   $\mu\alpha\iota\omicron\mu\iota$   $\iota\acute{\alpha}$   $\Delta\eta$   $n-\alpha$   $\beta\acute{\alpha}\rho\alpha\delta$   
 $\beta\alpha\delta$   $\epsilon\pi\upsilon\alpha\varsigma$   $\iota\epsilon\alpha\tau$   $\acute{\epsilon}$ .

If you were to give me that book.

$\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\tau\omicron\tau\upsilon\varsigma\tau\acute{\alpha}$ - $\rho\alpha$   $\tau\omicron\mu\eta\mu$   $\Delta\eta$   $\iota\epsilon\alpha\delta\alpha\mu$   $\rho\iota\eta$ .

If it were true for him.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\mu\beta\alpha\delta$   $\rho\iota\omicron\mu$   $\tau\omicron\delta$   $\acute{\epsilon}$ .

All the particles given above can also be used with the past subjunctive in reference to past time.

**553.** In the passive voice the present and past subjunctive are identical in form with the Present and Imperfect Tenses (respectively) of the Indicative Mood.

May it be worn out well.  $\xi\omicron$   $\xi\varsigma\alpha\iota\tau\tau\epsilon\alpha\mu$   $\xi\omicron$   $\mu\alpha\iota\tau$   $\acute{\epsilon}$ .

May it never be worn out.  $\eta\acute{\alpha}\rho$   $\epsilon\alpha\iota\tau\tau\epsilon\alpha\mu$   $\xi\omicron$   $\tau\epsilon\omicron$   $\acute{\epsilon}$ .

If it were worn out.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\xi\varsigma\alpha\iota\tau\tau\acute{\iota}$   $\acute{\epsilon}$ .

### Relative Form of the Verb.

**554.** The relative form of the verb is used after the relative particle  $\Delta$ , *when it is the subject of the verb*; (but never after the negative relative  $\mu\alpha\delta$ , *which* or *who...not*). It has a distinct form in two, and only

two, Tenses—the *Present* and the *Future*. In these two Tenses it ends in *ar* or *ear*. In all the other Tenses the third person singular is used after the relative pronoun. The verb is aspirated after the relative, expressed or understood ; but *nað* eclipses.

**555.** The inflection of the relative form in *present* tense is not used in the spoken Language of to-day (except in proverbs). In Connaught the final *r* of the relative form is added to the form for the 3rd person singular ; *e.g.*, *an fear a buaiteannr*, *the man who strikes* ; *an buachaill a tuiteannr*, *the boy who understands*. The literary form of the relative in the *future* tense is retained in full vigour in Connaught ; *e.g.*, *an fear a busaítear*, *the man who will strike*. In Munster the relative form has entirely disappeared in both the present and the future tenses (except in proverbs). The 3rd person singular form has taken its place ; *e.g.*, *an fear a buaiteann*, *the man who strikes*.

**556.** As the relative has no inflection for case, ambiguity sometimes arises : *e.g.*, *an fear a buaít Seagán*, may mean, either *the man who struck John*, or, *the man whom John struck*. The context usually solves the difficulty. The following construction is sometimes employed in order to obviate any ambiguity :—

<i>An fear a buaít Seagán.</i>	The man who struck John.
<i>An fear sup buaít Seagán é.</i>	The man whom John struck.

**557.** *Cionnup*, how ; *nuair*, when ; and *mar*, as, are followed by the relative form of the verb in the Present and Future, and the verb is aspirated ; but with *cionnup a*, *cia an éadai*, *cia an nóir*, *cia an moð*, or any

other such locutions, the eclipsing  $\alpha$  or  $\iota$  (*in which*) is used before the verb. Before the Past Tense, of course,  $\alpha\pi$  ( $\alpha + \pi\omicron$ ) is used.  $\text{Cionnu}\pi \alpha \text{ } \delta\pi\upsilon\iota \tau\acute{\upsilon}$ ? How are you?

$\mu\alpha\pi$  is also followed by the ordinary Present and Future.

**558.**  $\text{Su}\iota$ , “before,” has two usages. It may be followed by the relative forms—*e.g.*,  $\pi\upsilon\iota \text{ } \epsilon\iota\omicron\epsilon\pi\alpha\pi \text{ } \rho\acute{\epsilon}$ ,  $\pi\upsilon\iota \text{ } \epsilon\acute{\alpha}\mu\iota\varsigma \text{ } \rho\acute{\epsilon}$ ; or else it may be followed by one of the particles  $\alpha$ ,  $\mu\acute{\alpha}$ ,  $\pi\acute{\alpha}$ ,  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ , all of which eclipse.

**559.** After these particles, the Subjunctive Mood is often used when the event is future and uncertain, or contains a mental element: as—

$\iota\mu\epsilon\iota\varsigma \text{ } \lambda\epsilon\alpha\tau \pi\upsilon\iota \alpha \text{ } \delta\pi\epsilon\iota\epsilon\iota\omicron \text{ } \rho\acute{\epsilon} \text{ } \epsilon\acute{\upsilon}$ .

Be off (with you) before he sees you (*i.e.*, so that he may not see you).

It is not correct to eclipse after the word  $\pi\upsilon\iota$ , as  $\pi\upsilon\iota \text{ } \tau\epsilon\acute{\alpha}\mu\iota\varsigma$ , although sometimes done.

**560.** The relative form of the Present Tense is frequently used as a historic present, even when no relative occurs in the sentence: as—

$\text{No}\epsilon\tau\alpha\pi \text{ } \text{E}\pi\epsilon\mu\omicron\text{n } \tau\omicron\omicron\iota\upsilon$ . Eremon revealed to them.

### The Verbal Noun and its Functions.

561. "Is there an Infinitive in Irish?" We give here Father O'Leary's answer to his own question, "Certainly not." In Irish there is neither an infinitive mood nor a present participle, both functions being discharged by the verbal noun. It follows from this statement that *there is no such thing as a sign of the infinitive mood in Irish.*

Ír maíť uíom říuďal.	I wish to walk.
Đuďřar leír řan řeaťť.	I told him not* to come.
ťá ořmřa řeíteam.	I have to wait.
Níor maíť uíom bean- nuřađ ođ.	I did not wish to salute him.
Ní ťis le mála řolam řearam.	An empty bag cannot stand.

562. In the above examples, and in thousands of similar ones, *the Irish verbal noun is an exact equivalent in sense of the English infinitive, sign and all.* If any one of the prepositions o (or a), le or cum, be used before the verbal nouns in the above examples, the result is utter nonsense. Now consider the following examples :—

Ír maíť uíom an bōťar o říuďal.	I wish to walk the road.
Ír maíť uíom řocat o ťaďařť.	I wish to speak a word.

---

\* Not before the English infinitive is translated by řan (a prep., without).

Θυβαίητ μ'αταίητ λιὸμ ζαν	My father told me not to
αν capall το θίολ.	sell the horse.
ἴρ κόηρ θύητ αν πευρ το	You ought to cut the grass.
βαιητ.	
Αν πέητοιη τεατ αν έαιητ	Can you understand the
το έυηζηηητ ?	conversation ?
ἴρ μιαν λιὸμ ηητρη το	I wish to write a letter.
ρηζηήοθαθ.	

563. The *preposition* το in the above examples and ones like them between the noun and the verbal noun, is very often, in the spoken language, softened to α: and this α is not heard before or after a vowel: as,

ἴρ κόηρ θύητ κομαιητε 'ξηααθ.  
You ought to take advice.

564. In any sentence of the first set of examples there is question of only one thing; e.g., ρηυθαλ, τεαατ, πεητεαμ, &c., but in each of the sentences of the second set *there is a relation between two things*: e.g., βοθαη and ρηυθαλ, ροαλ and λαθαηητ, &c., and to express this relationship a *preposition is used between the two nouns*. If the relation between the nouns be altered the preposition must also be altered, as—

Τά βοθαη αζαμ τε ρηυθαλ,	I have a road to walk.
Τά ροαλ αζαμ τε λαθαηητ,	I have a word to say.
Τά capall αζαμ τε θίολ,	I have a horse for sale (to sell).
Τά πευρ αζατ τε βαιητ,	You have grass to cut.

565. There is still another preposition which can be used between the nouns to express another alteration in meaning—

Τά τεαέ cum comnuighe I have a house to live in.  
 Δῆαμ.

Τά capatt cum marcuig- He has a horse to ride on.  
 εαέτα αῖσε.

If in any one of these sentences the wrong preposition be employed the proper meaning cannot be expressed.

566. In translating the simple English infinitive of an intransitive verb, use the simple verbal noun in Irish: as,

He told me to go to Cork. Ουδαιρε πέ τιom του go  
 Corcaig.

An empty bag cannot stand. Ní tig le mála polam  
 ream.

It is impossible to write without learning. Ní féidir rscríobad san  
 foglam.

I prefer to walk. Ir fearr tiom riubal.

He cannot stand. Ní tig leir ream.

Tell him to sit down. Abair leir ruidé ríor.

Tell them to go away. Abair leo imteaét.



**567. When the English intransitive infinitive expresses purpose (i.e., the gerundial infinitive), use the preposition *le*.**

He came to stay,      *Ṭáinig sé le fanamaint.*

I have a word to say,      *Ṭá focaí agam le labairt.*

You are to wait,      *Ṭá tú le feiceam.*

I am to go,      *Ṭáim le dul.*

**568. When the English verb is transitive and in the simple infinitive (no purpose implied) use the preposition *do* or the softened form *a*.**

My father told me to buy      *Dubhairt m'athair liom*  
a horse.      *capall do éannaic.*

You ought to have cut      *Ba chóir dúit an fear do*  
the grass.      *ḃaint.*

He told me not to shut      *Dubhairt sé liom gan an*  
the door.      *doir do dúnad.*

Would you like to read      *An mian leat an leabhar*  
this book?      *ro do léigeat?*

**569. When the English infinitive is transitive, and also expresses purpose, use either *Cun* or *le* before the noun which is the object of the English infinitive, and *do* before the verbal noun in Irish; *cun* takes**



the noun after it in the genitive; *te* becomes *teir* before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.

He will come to judge the living and the dead. Tiocfaid Sé cum bpeit-eamhnair do tadbairt ar beo-daib agur ar marb-daib.

He came to buy a horse. Táinig ré le capall do ceannac.

He went to strike the men. Cuaid ré cun na bpear do buala.

He went to strike the man. Cuaid ré teir an bpear do buala.

He said that to praise the girl. Dubairt ré rin teir an scailín do mola.

He came to buy the horse. Táinig ré cum an capall a ceannac.

**570.** We can also express the above by means of the preposition *do* alone, but in this case we must put the verbal noun before the other noun. This latter will, of course, be now in the genitive case, because one noun governs another in the genitive case. This is the *only governing power the verbal noun has in Irish*.

He came to buy the horse. Táinig ré do ceannac an capall.

He went to strike the man. Cuaid ré do buala an fpir.

Did you come to strike John?    *An tórángair do bualadh Séadáin?*

He came to make fun.    *Éáinís ré do deunamh Spinn.*

They came to make war.    *Éánsaodar do deunamh cogadh.*

N.B.—This latter method is not often used in the spoken language.

**571. When the English infinitive is passive, and also expresses purpose, use *le*.**

He is to be hanged.    *Tá ré le crochadh, or le beic crochta.*

The milk is to be drunk.    *Tá an bainne le h-ól (&c.).*

Cows are to be bought at the fair.    *Tá ba le ceannadh ar an aonadh.*

The grass is to be cut.    *Tá an fear le bainc.*

The house is to be sold.    *Tá an teach le díol.*

There is no one to be seen on the road.    *Ní fuil duine ar bith le feiceint ar an mbóthar.*

**572. When a personal pronoun is the object of the English infinitive and the latter does not express purpose, we translate as follows:—**

You ought not to strike me.     $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ní cóir duit mé do bualadh.} \\ \text{Ní cóir duit mo bualadh.} \end{array} \right.$

I wished to strike him.     $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Ba mian liom é do bualadh.} \\ \text{Ba mian liom a bualadh.} \end{array} \right.$

- I wish to praise her.      { 1r mian liom i to molað.  
   { 1r mian liom a molað.
- It is not right to strike them.      { ni cóir iao to bualað.  
   { ni cóir a mbualað.
- It is a bad thing to wound me.      { 1r olc an puo mé to  
   { gonað.  
   { 1r olc an puo mo gonað.
- I cannot understand it.      ni tís liom a tuisirint  
   (its understanding).
- Could you tell me who it was?      an péirir leat a\* inhirint  
   toom cia 'ib'é?
- A desire to kill them came upon me.      táinís mian a marbta  
   oimra.

In this sentence marbta is the genitive case (after the noun mian) of the verbal noun marbað.

**573. When the English infinitive governing a personal pronoun expresses purpose, we translate as follows:—**

- He came to strike me.      { táinís pé toom bualað.  
   { táinís pé le mé to bualað.
- I went to strike them.      { Cuairt mé o'a mbualað.  
   { Cuairt mé le h-iao to  
   bualað.

---

\* Whenever the object of the verbal noun is a phrase, it cannot be put in the genitive case, but the possessive adjective a is used before the verbal noun.

They are coming to wound	{ Tá ríao aḡ teac̃t oáir nḡonaó.
us.	{ Tá ríao aḡ teac̃t le rinn oó ḡonaó.

If we used the autonomous form in this last sentence we would get—

They are coming to wound	{ Táctair aḡ teac̃t oáir nḡonaó.
us.	{ Táctair aḡ teac̃t le rinn oó ḡonaó.

**574.** The English present participle is usually translated by the verbal noun preceded by the preposition *aḡ*. If the English present participle expresses “rest” (*e.g., standing, sitting, lying, sleeping, &c.*), the verbal noun must be preceded by the preposition *í* (=in) compounded with a suitable possessive adjective (§ 186).

Tá ríao aḡ teac̃t.

They are coming.

Úí an buac̃aill' na fearaí.

The boy was standing.

Tá an bean na fearaí.

The woman is standing.

**575.** The verbal noun in each of the above is dative case, governed by the preposition *aḡ*.

**576.** When the English present participle governs an objective case, the object if a noun will follow the verbal noun in Irish and will be in the genitive case.

He is cutting the grass.

Tá ré aḡ baint̃ an péir.

She was stretching out her  
hand.

Úí rí aḡ pineaó a láime  
amaó.

Are you reading the letter? Ὅφουτ τὴ ἀς λέιγεαὐο να  
 ὑτρε?

Who was beating the child? Cιὰ βί ἀς βυαταὐο ἀν λεινῶ?

**577. If the object of the English present participle be a personal pronoun we cannot translate as in the above sentences, because the pronouns have no genitive case; hence instead of using the personal pronouns we must employ the possessive adjectives. Possessive adjectives must always precede the nouns which they qualify.**

He is striking me. τὰ ρέ 'ῥαμ (or ἀΰομ)  
 βυαταὐο (lit. he is at my  
 beating).

Are you breaking it? Ὅφουτ τὴ 'ῥά (ἀῤα)  
 ὅριρεαὐο?

Are you breaking them? Ὅφουτ τὴ 'ῥά (ἀῤα) μβριρ-  
 εαὐο?

He is praising us. τὰ ρέ ῥάρι (ἀῤ ἄρι) μοταὐο.

Is he not burning them? ἡαὐ ὅφουτ ρέ 'ῥά (ἀῤα)  
 νωόῥαὐο?

They are not striking her. ἡί φουτ ριαὐ 'ῥά (ἀῤα)  
 βυαταὐο.

Note carefully the initial effects of the possessive adjectives on the verbal nouns after them.

**578. Preceded by *an*, the Verbal Noun has the force of a Present Participle Passive, denoting a continued or habitual state : as,**

Ní fuit *an* teanga rin *an*      That language is not  
labairt anois.                              spoken now.

Tá *an* éruit *an* cpoáð *an*      The harp is hanging on  
*an* ngeis.                              the bough.

Sgeul *an* leanamaint.      A. continued story.  
In this idiom *an* neither aspirates nor eclipses.

**579. With *an*, after (eclipsing), the Verbal Noun has the force of a Perfect Participle : as,**

an tceadt i n-Éirinn do pádraig,  
Patrick having come into Ireland.

But in this idiom *an* is usually shortened to *a*: as, *a* tceadt, &c., the eclipsis being retained. In colloquial language the Verbal Noun is commonly aspirated, not eclipsed, by *a* in this usage.

**580. *San* is the word used to express negation with the Verbal Noun : as, *san* teadt, not to come.**

Abair le Brian *san* *an* goit do treabáð.  
Tell Brian not to plough the field.

**581. *San* with the Verbal Noun has the force of the Passive Participle in English with *un* prefixed: as,**

Mo cúig púint olua agus iad *san* rníom,  
My five pounds of wool, and they *unspun*.

**582.** The genitive of the Verbal Noun is often used where a relative or infinitive clause would be used in English: as,

Níor fásad fear inniúte rḡéit,  
There was not a man left *to tell the tidings*.

Cailín deap crúiríte na mbó,  
The pretty girl *who milks* the cows (lit. of the milking, &c.).

**583.** The following examples will be studied with advantage. They are culled from Father O'Leary's *Míon-éaint* :—

Someone is striking me.      Táctar 'ḡam bualaḡ.

I am being struck.      Táim dom bualaḡ.

Someone is striking the dog.      Táctar aḡ bualaḡ an ḡaḡair.

The dog is being struck.      Tá an ḡaḡair dá bualaḡ.

Someone is breaking the stones.      Táctar aḡ bḡiread na ḡcloḡ.

The stones are being broken.      Tá na cloḡa dá mbḡiread.

They used to kill people.      B'íctí aḡ marbḡad daoine.

People used to be killed.      B'íod daoine dá marbḡad.

They used to buy horses.      B'íctí aḡ ceannaḡ capall.

Horses used to be bought.      B'íod capall dá ḡceannaḡ.



We (or they) will be dig-    Θείρρεαρ ας βαιντ ππά-  
ging potatoes.                    ταιοι.

Potatoes will be dug.        Θείρ ππάταιοι τά μβαιντ.

We shall have dug the    Θείρ να ππάταιοι βαιντε  
potatoes.                    ας αινν.

If they were breaking    Τά μβείρφι ας βριρεαό  
stones they would not    ελοό νί βείρφι ρυαρ.  
be cold.

If they are breaking stones    Μά τάτταρ ας βριρεαό ελοό  
they are not cold.            νί ρυιτταρ ρυαρ.

### THE VERB IS.

**584. A definite noun is one limited by its nature or by some accompanying word to a definite individual or group.**

**The following are definite nouns:—**

- (a) The name of a person or place (but not a class name like Σαρανάς).
- (b) A noun preceded by the definite article.
- (c) A noun preceded by a demonstrative adjective.
- (d) A noun preceded by ζαό (because it means each taken individually).
- (e) A noun followed by any other definite noun in the genitive case.

Any noun not included in the above classes is an **indefinite noun**.

**585.** Whenever a definite noun is the subject of a verb in English, and the verb *is* is employed in translating into Irish, a personal pronoun must immediately precede the definite noun in Irish.

John is the man. *Is é Seagán an fear*

### WHEN TO USE THE VERB *IS*.

**586. (a)** When the verb “to be” in English is followed by a definite noun, use *is* : as,

I am John.	<i>Is m'is Seagán.</i>
It is the man.	<i>Is é an fear é.</i>
You are my brother.	<i>Is tú mo dhearbhráthair.</i>
James is the man.	<i>Is é Seumas an fear.</i>
It is the woman of the house.	<i>Is í bean an tíge í.</i>
Are you not my friend?	<i>Ná é tú mo chara?</i>
He is not my father.	<i>Ní h-é m'athair.</i>

All sentences of this class are called “**Identification sentences.**”

He, she and they in sentences of identity have usually the force of demonstrative pronouns, and are translated by *é sin*, *í sin*, *iad sin*.

**(b)** When the verb “to be” in English is followed by an indefinite noun *is* or *tá* may be used, but with very different meanings. Whenever we use the verb *is* in such a sentence we convey the idea of “**classification,**” or *species* : as, *Is*

áinmíge bó. A cow is an animal, &c.; or we *lay stress on what the person or thing is at the time being*, without any thought that he has become what he, or it, is. For instance, a father, enumerating to a friend the various positions in life of his children, may say, *ir ceannuirí Seumas, ir ríagairt Seagán, agus ir fear olíge Mícheál*: James is a merchant, John a priest, and Michael is a lawyer. He should not use *τá* in such a case, as he considers simply what each is at the time being. When *τá* is used we convey the idea that the person or thing *has become* what he (or it) is, *and that he (or it) was not always so*. Suppose a father is telling what professions his sons have adopted, he should say, *τá Seumas 'na ceannuirí, &c.* **In such constructions the verb *τá* must be followed by the preposition *í* or *a*, and a suitable possessive adjective.**

(c) The difference between *τá* and *ir* is well exemplified by the two sentences *ir fear é* and *τá ré 'na fear*, both meaning “He is a man.” If we see a figure approach us in the dark, and after looking closely at it we discover it to be a man, our correct phraseology would then be, *ir fear é*. But when we say *τá ré 'na fear* we convey a very different idea. We mean that the person of whom we are speaking is no longer a boy, he has now reached manhood. If anyone were speaking to you of a person as if he were a mere boy, and you wished to correct him, you should use the phrase *τá ré 'na fear*.

(d) When the indefinite noun after the verb “to be” in English is qualified by an adjective, the verb *ir* or *τᾱ* may be used according to the idea we wish to convey. If we wish to express a “condition sentence” (*i.e.*, one which has reference to the state or condition of the subject at the time in question), we use *τᾱ*; otherwise we employ *ir*, *e.g.*,

He is a small man.      *Τᾱ ρε 'να ῥεαρ βεαῖ.*

He is a useful man.      *Τᾱ ρε 'να ῥεαρ ῥόξαντα.*

She was a good woman      *Ὅι ρί 'να μναοι ῥαίτ.*

(e) When the verb *ir* is employed in such sentences *there is a choice of two constructions*. In the second construction (as given in the examples below), we emphasise the adjective, by making it the prominent idea of the sentence. The definite article must be used in the second construction.

*ir* *lā* *bpeāṣ* *é*.  
*ir* *bpeāṣ* *an* *lā* *é*.      } It is a fine day.

*ir* *orōce* *ῥuap* *í*.  
*ir* *ῥuap* *an* *orōce* *í*.      } It is a cold night.

*ir* *bō* *bpeāṣ* *í* *ῥin*.  
*ir* *bpeāṣ* *an* *bō* *í* *ῥin*.      } That is a fine cow.

*nac* *oileán* *ῥeap* *é* *ῥin*?  
*nac* *ῥeap* *an* *τ-oileán* *é* *ῥin*?      } Isn't that a pretty island?

(f) When a simple adjective follows the verb "to be" in English, either *ir* or *ṛá* may be employed in translating, as,

Honey is sweet, *ir miltir milt* or *ṛá milt miltir*.

He is strong, *ir láirir é* or *ṛá ré láirir*.

**587.** The beginning of a sentence is naturally the place of greatest prominence, and is usually occupied in Irish by the verb. When, however, any idea other than that contained in the verb is to be emphasised, it is placed immediately after the verb *ir*, and the rest of the sentence is thrown into the relative form.

For example, "We went to Derry yesterday," would be generally translated: *Ḃuairḁ rinn ḡo Ḃoirḁ inḁé*: but it may also take the following forms according to the word emphasised.

*We went to Derry yester-* *ir rinne ḁo Ḃuairḁ ḡo*  
*day.* *Ḃoirḁ inḁé.*

*We went to Derry yester-* *ir ḡo Ḃoirḁ ḁo Ḃuairḁ*  
*day.* *rinn inḁé.*

*We went to Derry yester-* *ir inḁé ḁo Ḃuairḁ rinn ḡo*  
*day.* *Ḃoirḁ.*

**588.** The Verb *is* is then used.

- |     |                      |   |
|-----|----------------------|---|
| (1) | To express Identity, | <i>e.g., ir é Conn an pí.</i>               |
| (2) | „ Classification,    | <i>ir pí Conn.</i>                          |
| (3) | „ Emphasis,          | <i>ir inḁé ḁo Ḃuairḁ<br/>rinn ḡo Ḃoirḁ.</i> |

## POSITION OF WORDS WITH 1S.

589. The predicate of the sentence always follows

1S: as,

Dermot is a man, 1r fear Dáirmuid.

They are children, 1r páirtoí iad.

John is a priest, 1r rásairt Seagán.

Coal is black, 1r dub gual.

A cow is an animal, 1r ainmíge bó.

Turf is not coal, Ní gual móin.

Is it a man? An fear é?

590. Sentences of Identification—*e.g.*, *Conn is the king*—form an apparent exception. The fact is that in this sentence either the word “Conn” or “the king” may be the *logical predicate*. In English “king” is the *grammatical predicate*, but in Irish it is the *grammatical subject*, and “Conn” is the *grammatical predicate*. Hence the sentence will be, 1r é Conn an rí.

591. In such sentences, when two nouns or a pronoun and noun are connected by the verb 1r, as a general rule, the more particular and individual of the two is made grammatical predicate in Irish. The converse usually holds in English. For instance, we say in English “I am the messenger,” but in Irish 1r mipe an teachtair (lit. “the messenger is I”). Likewise with the following:—

You are the man, 1r tú an fear.

He is the master, 1r é sin an maistrí.

We are the boys, 1r sinne na buachaillí.



**592.** Sentences like "It is Donal," "It is the messenger," &c., are translated  $\text{ἵρ ἔ Ὀμόναττ ἔ, ἵρ ἔ ἀν τεαότταττε ἔ.}$  Here " $\text{ἔ Ὀμόναττ}$ " and " $\text{ἔ ἀν τεαότταττε}$ " are the grammatical predicates, and the second  $\text{ἔ}$  in each case is the subject.

It is the master,  $\text{ἵρ ἔ ἀν μαίξιρττῖρ ἔ.}$

He is the master,  $\text{ἵρ ἔ ρῖν ἀν μαίξιρττῖρ.}$

(The underlined words are the predicates.)

**593.** In recent times we often find such sentences as " $\text{ἵρ ἔ ἀν μαίξιρττῖρ,}$ " " $\text{ἵρ ἔ ἀν ρεαρ,}$ " &c., for "It is the master," "It is the man," in which the last  $\text{ἔ,}$  the subject of the sentence, is omitted.

### Translation of the English Secondary Tenses.

**594.** The English Present Perfect Tense is translated by means of the Present Tense of the verb  $\text{τά,}$  followed by  $\text{ο' ἔῖρ}$  (or  $\text{ταρ ἔῖρ}$ ) and the verbal noun. When  $\text{ο' ἔῖρ}$  comes immediately before the verbal noun, the latter will be in the genitive case; but when  $\text{ο' ἔῖρ}$  is separated from the verbal noun by the object of the English verb, the verbal noun will be preceded by the preposition  $\text{οο,}$  and will be dative case.

He wrote,  $\text{Ὅο ρξρῖοῦ ρέ.}$

He has just written,  $\text{τά ρέ ο' ἔῖρ ρξρῖοῦῑα.}$

He broke the window,  $\text{Ὅο ὅμῖρ ρέ ἀν ρῖννεοξ.}$

He has broken the window,  $\text{τά ρέ ο' ἔῖρ να ρῖννεοῖξε οο ὅμῖρεαῑ.}$

He has just died,  $\text{τά ρέ ο' ἔῖρ ὅαῖρ ο' ραξάῖτ.}$



595. The word “*just*” in these sentences is not translated into Irish, and the word after *o’ éir* is in the genitive case.

596. When the English verb is transitive there is another very neat method of translating the secondary tenses. As already stated, there is no verb “*to have*” in Irish: its place is supplied by the verb *ṭá* and the preposition *as*. Thus, “*I have a book*” is, *Ṭá leabhar agam*. A similar construction may be used in translating the secondary tenses of an English transitive verb. The following sentences will illustrate the construction:—

I have written the letter,	<i>Ṭá an litir scríobtha agam.</i>
I have struck him,	<i>Ṭá ré buailte agam.</i>
Have you done it yet?	<i>Ḃfuil ré deunta agat fós?</i>
I have broken the stick,	<i>Ṭá an maide bhriste agam.</i>

597. The English **Pluperfect** and **Future Perfect** are translated in the same manner as the Present Perfect, except that the Past and Future Tenses respectively of *Ṭá* must be used instead of the Present, as above. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

He died,	<i>Ḃfuair ré báir.</i>
He had just died,	<i>Ḃí ré o’ éir báir o’ fásáil.</i>
He had broken the chair,	<i>Ḃí ré o’ éir na cathaoiríe</i>
	<i>do bhriseadh.</i>
	<i>(Ḃí an cathaoir bhriste aige.</i>



Cuimníġim ar,	I remember.
Deiġum ar,	I catch, I overtake.
Ġleuraġim ar,	I prepare (ġleurf orġ, get ready).
Leiġim oo,	I allow, permit.
Comaġġilġim oo,	I advise.
Maġġim oo,	I forgive, pardon.
Freagħraġim oo,	I answer.
Ġoġim ar,	I help.
Ġiġġeann liom,	I succeed (lit. It arises with me).
Tiġim le,	I confirm, I corroborate.
Tiġ liom	I can.
Sġaolġim oo,	I loose.
Imġiġim ar,	I beg, I beseech.
Taġġiġim le,	I please.

599. Many verbs require prepositions different from those required by their English equivalents.

Laġħraġim ar,	I speak of.
Ġanaġim le,	I wait for.
Traġġtaġim ar,	I treat of.
Ceġim ar,	I conceal from.
Sġaraġim le,	I separate from.
Cuġim ġior ar,	I send for.
Laġħraġim le,	I speak to.
Deiġim le,	I say to.
Ar . . . le,	say, said to (ar is used only in quotation).

Ծեփսսսմ աջաօժ ար,  
 Ծեւսսսմ մաջաօժ բձ,  
 Ըրսսսմ բձ,  
 Ծսսսմ ԼԵ (also ոօ),  
 Ծեփսսսմ Բսսսմ ար,  
 Ծսսսմ Բօօրսսսմ աջ,  
 Ըրսսսմ ԼԵ,  
 Ծար ԼԵ,  
 ԶԼսսսմ ար,  
 Ըսսսմ ար,  
 Զսսսմ ար,  
  
 Բեւսսսմ ար,  
  
 Բձսսսմ ԲԼան աջ,  
 ԼԵսսսմ ԾԵ,  
 Ծեփսսսմ ար...ար,  
  
 Ծօլսսսմ ԼԵ...ար,  
  
 Ծօլսսսմ ար,  
 Ըսսսմ ԼԵ,  
 Ըրօսսսմ ար, Ըրսսսմ  
 ար, Լսսսմ ար,

I face (for) (a place).  
 I make fun of, I mock.  
 I tremble at.  
 I belong to, I appertain to.  
 I win a victory over.  
 I am bothered with.  
 I listen to.  
 It seems to.  
 I call for.  
 I excel or surpass in.  
 I pray for; also, I beseech.  
 (Զսսսմ օրսսսմ, pray for us.)  
 look at (բեւսսսմ օրսսսմ, Look at  
 them; բեւսսսմ ԼԵ, Examine  
 or try them).  
 I bid farewell to.  
 I stick to.  
 I take hold of...by: as, He  
 caught me by the hand.  
 Բսսսմ ԲԵ ար Լսսսմ օրսսսմ.  
 Catch her by the hand,  
 Ծեփ ար Լսսսմ սրսսմ.  
 I sell to...for. He sold me  
 a cow for £10. Ծօլ ԲԵ Բօ  
 Լսսսմ ար ԾԵԻՇ Բրսսսմ ԼԵ,  
 I pay for.  
 I throw at.  
 I begin to (do something).

### The Negative Adverb—Not.

600. Young students experience great difficulty in translating the English negative adverb—"not." We here give the various ways of translating "not."

**Not**, with the **Imperative mood**, is translated by *nā*.

„ „ **Subjunctive** „ „ *nān*.

„ „ **Verbal Noun** „ „ *ṣan*.

Indicative Mood	{	Past Tense	{ statement, <i>nīon</i> or <i>čar</i> . question, <i>nān</i> or <i>načar</i> .
		All other tenses	{ statement, <i>nī</i> or <i>ča</i> . question, <i>nač</i> , <i>nā</i> .

"If...not" is translated by *muna* :\* if the verb be in the past tense use *munaṇ*.

All the above forms are used in principal sentences only. In dependent sentences "that...not" is always translated by *nač* or *nā*, except in the past tense, indicative mood, when *nān* or *načar* must be used.

*nī*, aspirates; *ča*, eclipses. *Ča* becomes *čan* before *ir* and *put*: e.g., *čan mé*, *It is not I*.

#### How to answer a question. Yes—No.

601. (a) In Irish there are no fixed words for "Yes" or "No." As a general rule in replying to questions, "Yes" or "No" is translated by using the same verb and tense as has been employed in the question.

---

\* Pronounced *morru*.

The subject of the verb used in reply need not be expressed, except when it is contained in the verb ending. In English we frequently use a double reply, as "Yes, I will." "No, I was not," &c. In Irish we use only one reply.

Ófuit tú tinn? Táim. Are you sick? Yes, or I am.

Raib ré annsin? Ní raib. Was he there? No.

An bhaca tú Seagán? Did you see John? No.  
Ní bacar or ní facar.

An bhaca ré an teach? Did he see the house?  
Connaic. He did.

An dtuigean tú? Do you understand? Yes.  
Tuigim.

An dtiocfaid tú? Ní Will you come? No, I  
tiocfaid. will not.

(b) When the question has been asked with any part of the verb *ir*, expressed or understood, followed by a **definite** noun, the English subject **must** be used in the answer, as also must the verb, except when the answer is negative.

An tú an fear? Ní m'fe. Are you the man? No.

Nac é sin an fear? Ir é. Is not he the man? Yes,  
he is.

An b'é sin Seagán? Níor Was that John? No, it  
b'é. was not.

Notice also the following :—

FIRST SPEAKER.	SECOND SPEAKER.
ἵρ μῖρε ἀν τελεῖται.	Ἀν τῦ ?
<i>I am the messenger.</i>	<i>Are you ?</i>
ἡὶ ἡ-έ ρῖν ἄρ ραῖαρ.	ἡὰς έ ?
<i>He is not our priest.</i>	<i>Isn't he ?</i>
ἵρ έ ἀν ρεαρ έ.	ἡὶ ἡ-έ.
<i>It is the man.</i>	<i>It is not.</i>

(c) Whenever the question is asked by any part of the verb ἵρ, followed by an **indefinite** predicate, the word “Yes” is usually translated by repeating the verb and the indefinite predicate, as—

ἡὰς ρῦαρ ἀν ἡὰς έ ? ἵρ Isn't it a cold day? Yes,  
ρῦαρ. or It is.

ἡὰς μαῖτ έ ? ἵρ μαῖτ. Is it not good? Yes, or  
It is.

Ἀν αῖγε ἀτά ἀν τ-αῖρ γεαὐ ? Is it he who has the  
ἵρ αῖγε. money? Yes.

But in this case the answer may also be correctly given by using the neuter pronoun εαὐ. ἵρ εαὐ (or 'ρεαὐ) for “yes;” ἡὶ ἡ-εαὐ for “no.”

Ἀν μαῖαὐ έ ρῖν ? ἡὶ Is that a dog? No.  
ἡ-εαὐ.

Ἀν Σαρανας έ ? 'Seαὐ. Is he an Englishman ?  
Yes.

ἡὰς μαῖτ έ ? 'Seαὐ. Isn't it good ? It is.



(d) When the question is asked with “who” or “what,” the subject alone is used in the answer, and if the subject be a personal pronoun the emphatic form will be used, as—

CIA punne é rin? mipe. Who did that? I did.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

---

### The Preposition.

**602.** As a general rule the simple prepositions govern a dative case, and precede the words which they govern: as,

ṬÁINIS ré ó Córcais. He came from Cork.

ṬuS ré an t-uðall do'n He gave the apple to the  
mnaoi. woman.

**Exceptions.** (1) The preposition *roin*, “between,” governs the accusative case: as, *roin* Córcais agus Luimneac, between Cork and Limerick.

(2) *Go* *roí*,\* meaning “to” (*motion*), is followed by the nominative case.

Ḳuairé ré go roí an teac. He went to the house.

---

\**Go roí* is really a corrupted form of the old subjunctive mood of the verb *tiγim*, I come; so that the noun after *go roí* was formerly nominative case to the verb.

(3) The preposition *gan*, “*without*,” governs the dative in the singular, but the accusative in the plural: as,

Τά ρέ γαν ἑέντ.                      He is without sense.

Γαν ἀρ γκαίρρε.                      Without our friends.

**603.** The words *timceall* (*around*),\* *trapna* or *traparna* (*across*), *coir* (*beside*), *fas* (*along*), *cum†* or *cun* (*towards*), *coirg* (*owing to*), *ὑάλα*, *ὑάτα*, and [*iomtúra*] (*as to*, or *concerning*), although really nouns, are used where prepositions are used in English. Being nouns, **they are followed by the genitive case.**

Ḫuail ré fas na rróine é.      He struck him along the  
nose.

Ἀν mbéirō tú ag toul cum      Will you be going to  
an donais i mbárac?              (towards) the fair to-  
morrow?

Ḫo put ré timceall na      He ran around this place.  
h-áite reo.

Ḫo cúasdar trapna an      They went across the field  
gairt eorna.                      of barley.

For the so-called compound prepositions see par. 608, &c.

**604.** The prepositions *i* (*in*) and *te* (*with*) become *inr* and *teir* before the article: e.g., *inr an leabhan* *in*

\* The meanings given in parenthesis are the usual English equivalents, *not the real meaning of the words.*

† The *m* in this word is pronounced like *n*.

*the book*; *leir an bpeap, with the man*. In Munster *ó* (*from*), *oe* (*off, from*), *oo* (*to*), *aiſe* (= *as, at, with*), and some others take *r* before the *plural* article—*ó rna pearnab, from the men*; *oo rna buab, to the cows*.

**605.** The simple prepositions cause aspiration when the article is not used with them: as, *ap bap an enuc*. On the top of the hill. *puap ré ó pearn an tige é*. He got it from the man of the house.

**Exceptions** (1) The prepositions *as, at; te, with; ap, out; so, to*, cause neither aspiration nor eclipsis; as, *oo tuir ré te Goll*. He fell by Goll. *cuab ré so baile-Áta-Ciata*. He went to Dublin.

*San, without*, may aspirate or not.

(2) The preposition *i* or *a*, *in*, causes eclipsis even without the article: as, *bi ré i gCorcaig*. He was in Cork.

**606.** The simple prepositions, when followed by the article and a noun in the singular number, usually cause eclipsis: as, *ap an mbap*, on the top; *ó 'n bpeap*, from the man; *'ran mbaile*, at home.

**Exceptions.** (1) The prepositions *oo,\* to*, and *oe, of, off, from*, when followed by the article, usually cause aspiration, though in some places eclipsis takes place.

---

\**So* or *so ocí* is usually used for “to” when *motion to* is implied (the Latin acc. of motion). *oo* is usually used for “to” when *no motion* is implied (the Latin dative).

Aspiration is the more common practice: *ʋo 'n fɛaɾ*, to the man; *ʋe'n mnaoɪ*, from the woman. They prefix *ɾ* to *ɾ*; as, *ʦʊʂ ɾɛ ʋo'n ɾɾaʂaɾɾ ɛ*. He gave it to the priest. *ʂa* (= *ɪnɾ aɪ*) usually aspirates in Munster; *ɾa ʋoɾʂa mɔɾ*, *in the big box*.

(2) When *ʂaɪ*, *without*, is followed by the article it produces no change in the initial consonant following: as, *ʂaɪ aɪ ɾiɔɪ*, without the wine; but if the following noun be masculine and begin with a vowel, or be feminine beginning with *ɾ*, *ɾ* is prefixed: as, *ʂaɪ aɪ ɾ-eun*, without the bird; *ʂaɪ aɪ ɾɾuɪ*, without the eye.

In the Northern dialect aspiration takes place after the preposition and the article.

607. When a simple preposition ending in a vowel comes before the possessive adjective *a* (*his, her, or their*), or the possessive *ai*, *our*, and *ʋuɪ*, *your*, the letter *n* is inserted before the possessive: as, *ɾɛ n-a ɪaiɪ*, by his hand; *ɾɾɛ n-a mboɾaiʋ*, through their palms; *ɾɛ n-ai ʂcuɪʋ*, with (or by) our portion; *ɾɛ nʋuɪ ʋtoɪ*, with your permission.

Except the prepositions *ʋo* and *ʋe*, which become *ʋ'*.

Whenever *ʂo* or *ɾɛ* comes before any other word beginning with a vowel the letter *n* is usually inserted: as, *o mɪaɪɔɪ ʂo n-oɪʋɛ*, from morning till night; *ʂo n-aiʋaɪ*, to Scotland; *ɾɛ n-eaʂɪa*, with fear. (See par. 29.)

**608.** In Irish certain nouns preceded by prepositions have often the force of English prepositions. As nouns they are, of course, followed by a genitive case, unless a preposition comes between them and the following noun, when the dative case naturally follows. Such locutions are styled in most grammars "Compound Prepositions," and to account for their construction they give the rule "*Compound Prepositions are followed by the genitive case.*"

**609.** We give here a fairly full list of such phrases employed in Modern Irish.

1 bparrao,	along with; on the side of.
1 briaðnuire,	} in the presence of.
1 ládaire,	
or cõmaire,	
or coinne,	before; face to face.
ar uet,	} for the sake of, for the love of
ar ron,	
ar rãd,	under the pretext of.
1 bpoðaire,	} along with, in company with.
1 oteanta,	
1 otaob,	concerning ; with regard to.
1 sceann,	at the end of.
pé óein,	} for, (in the sense of going for).
1 scoinne,	
pé óein,	towards.
1 mearf,	among, amongst.

απ ἀγαιῶ,	opposite.
ἢ ἡ-ἀγαιῶ,	against.
απ πεδιῶ,	throughout (used of time).
τε ἡ-εαριῶ,	for want of.
απ πυῶ,	throughout (used of space).
ἢ ὕκοιρ, (ἢ ὕκομοιρ),	for, for the benefit of.
απ ἐυλ,	behind, at the back of.
ἢ ἡτοιαῶ,	after (used of <i>place</i> ).
ταρ ἐιρ, ὅ' ἐιρ,	after (used of time).
ἢ ὕκοιρνιῶ, ἢ ὕκοιρνε,	against.
ἢ ὕκυρραιῶ,	concerning, about.
ἐυν, }	to, towards.
(ἐυν), }	
ὅ' ἰονηραιῶ,	towards.
ὅ' ἰονηραιῶ,	
τε κοιρ, }	beside, by the side of (a sea, a river, &c.)
κοιρ, }	
ἢ ἡ-ευῶ,	against.
ὅο πέιρ,	according to.
ὀρ κιορν,	over, above.
ταρ ἐεανρ,	beyond, in preference to.
τε ἡ-αιρ,	beside, by the side of.
ἢ ὕκαίτεαν, ἢ πυτ,	during.
ἢ ἡ-αινῶεοιν, }	in spite of.
ἢ ἡ-αιμῶεοιν, }	
τε ἡ-ἀγαιῶ,	for, for the use of.
ἢ ἡ-αιε,	near.



## 610. Some of them are followed by Prepositions.

láim le,	near, beside.
1 n-ḡar oo,	near.
timceall ar,	around ( <i>and touching</i> ).
mar ḡeall ar,	on account of.
mar don le,	along with, together with.
1 n-éinfeadct le, }	together with, at the same
1 n-don-oige le, }	time as.

## 611. Examples—(1) Nouns.

Do cuir ré or cionn an doras é.	He put it over the door.
Connac 1 n-aice an tobair iad	I saw them near the well.
Do rit an ḡadair 1 noisrò an trionnais.	The hound ran after the fox.
Cia bí 1 brodair Seumair?	Who was along with James?
Do tug ré dom an capall ro le n-aḡar an trasairt.	He gave me this horse for the priest.
Tiocfao ar air o' éir an tramhair.	I shall come back after the summer.
Ní fuil leigear ar bit 1 n-aḡar an báir.	There is no remedy against death.
Do cuair ré fá oéin na ḡcapall.	He went for the horses.
Ar fearo an lae.	Throughout the day.
Ar fuo na tíre.	Throughout the country.

Do réir an leabhair seo.	According to this book.
Tá ré le coir na fairrige.	He is beside the sea.
Do cuir ré an lúb tim- ceall ar mo ceann.	He put the loop around my head.

## 612.

## (2) Pronouns.

Cháinig ré im dhiaid.	He came after me.
Ná téig 'na ndiaid seo.	Do not go after these.
Cia bhí 'na fócair?	Who was along with him?
Deunfaid é rin ar do fion.	I shall do that for your sake.
Ar ceannuigir é seo lem a dhiaid?	Did you buy this one for me?
Bhí ar a n-a dhiaid.	I was opposite them.
Tá an fúireós or ár gcoinne.	The lark is above us.
An raib tú i n-áir n-aice (i n-aice linn)?	Were you near us?
Bhí ré i n-aice liom.	He was near me.
Cháinig siad im a dhiaid.	They came against me.

## Translation of the Preposition "For."

**613.** (a) When "for" means "to bring," "to fetch," use fá dhéin, a gcoinne, or a g iarraid, followed by a genitive case; or a g timall ar: as,

Go for the horse.	Téig a g timall ar an gcapall.
He went for John.	Cuaid ré fá dhéin Sheagáin.



In the first sentence the year is supposed to be completed at the time we are speaking about, and is, therefore, past with regard to the time we are describing.

In the second sentence the time at which the action of *staying* (if we be allowed to use the word "action") took place at the very beginning of the year that he spent there. The year itself came after the time we are describing; therefore it is future with regard to that time

It will be a great assistance to the student to remember that *ar* *reab* or *go ceann* are used when in the English sentence the fact is merely stated, as in sentence (2); and that *le* is used when a secondary tense ought to be used in the English sentence, as in sentence (1).

(e) When "*for*" means "for the sake of," use *ar* *ron* followed by a genitive case.

He toiled for a little gold. *Saoctruis ré ar ron beas-  
áin óir.*

(f) When "*for*" is used in connection with "buying" or "selling," use *ar* followed by a dative case.

He bought it for a pound. *Ceannuis ré ar púnt é.*  
I sold it for a shilling. *Óiolar ar ríuiling é.*

(g) "*For*" after the English verb "ask" is not translated in Irish.

He asked me for a book. *O' iarr ré leabhar oim.*  
Ask that man for it. *Iarr ar an bpean roim é.*

(h) "*For*" after the word "desire" (*óuit*) is usually translated by *i* (=in): as, Desire for gold, *óuit i n-óir* or, *óuit in ar óir.*

(i) The English phrase "*only for*" very often means "were it not for," "had it not been for," and is translated by *muna mbiað*, followed by a nominative.

Only for John the horse *muna mbeað* *Seagán* *do*  
would be dead now. *beað an capall marb*  
*anoir.*

#### 614. Note the following Examples.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| I have a question <i>for you</i> .               | <i>Tá ceirt agam ort.</i>                                   |
| To play <i>for</i> (a wager).                    | <i>Imirt an (geall).</i>                                    |
| To send <i>for</i> .                             | <i>Fíor do cúr . . . ar.</i>                                |
| A cure <i>for</i> sickness.                      | { <i>Leigear i n-aghaid tinnir.</i><br><i>„ ar tinnear.</i> |
| To wait <i>for</i> .                             | <i>Fanaimint le.</i>  |
| <i>For</i> your life, don't tell.                | <i>Ar d'anam, ná h-innir.</i>                               |
| He faced <i>for</i> the river.                   | <i>Tuag ré a aghaid ar an</i><br><i>abainn.</i>             |
| They fought <i>for</i> (about)<br>the Fiannship. | <i>Éiriodaodar um an</i><br><i>bfiannuigeacht.</i>          |
| Don't blame him <i>for</i> it.                   | <i>Ná cuir a mílteán air (its</i><br><i>blame on him).</i>  |
| I have great respect <i>for</i><br><i>you</i> .  | <i>Tá mear mór agam ort.</i>                                |
| This coat is too big <i>for me</i> .             | <i>Tá an cóta ro ró-mór</i><br><i>dom.</i>                  |
| What shall we have <i>for</i><br>dinner?         | <i>Caidé bíd ar agaim ar</i><br><i>ar n-dinneur?</i>        |
| It is as good <i>for</i> you to do<br>your best. | <i>Tá ré com maic agat do</i><br><i>óiceall do deunam.</i>  |

### 615. Translation of the Preposition "Of."

(a) Whenever "*of*" is equivalent to the English possessive case, translate it by the genitive case in Irish.

The son of the man.	mac an fíir.
The house of the priest.	teach an traidir.

There are cases in which the English "*of*," although not equivalent to the possessive case, is translated by the genitive in Irish.

The man of the house.	féar an tíge.
A stone of meal.	cloch míne.

(b) Whenever "*of*" describes the material of which a thing is composed, or the contents of a body, use the genitive case.

A ring of iron.	fáinne iarainn.
A cup of milk.	cupán bainne.
A glass of water.	gléine uisce.

(c) When "*of*" comes after a numeral, or a noun expressing a part of a whole, use *de* with the dative; but if the word after "*of*" in English be a *personal pronoun*, use one of the compounds of *ag* with the personal pronouns.

The first day of the week.	An cúirt lá <i>de</i> 'n tréacht- máin.
One of our hounds.	Ceann <i>de</i> ' ár n- <i>gach</i> ais.
Many of the nobles.	Mórán <i>de</i> na h-uairis.
One of us was there.	Ói <i>de</i> ime <i>ag</i> ainn ann.



Some of them. Curo aca.

One of these (persons). Duine aca ro.

A leat is used for "*half of it*" or "*half of them.*"

(d) When "*of*" follows "*which*," use *oe* with nouns, and *as* with pronouns.

Which of the men? C1a (c1aca) *oe* na fearaib?

Which of us? C1a asainn?

(e) When "*of*" means "*about*" use *timc1o1u* or *pá*.  
They were talking of the *U1o1oap as caint timc1o1u*  
matter. *an pu1a.*

(f) "*Of*" after the English verb "*ask*," "*inquire*," is translated by *oe*.

Ask that of John. *fiapru1s rin oe Sea1án.*

(g) When "*of*" expresses "*the means*" or "*instrument*" use *le* or *oe*.

He died of old age. *fuap ré báp le rean-aoir.*

He died of hunger. *fuap ré báp leir an ocrap.*

He died of a seven days' sickness. *fuap ré báp oe 1a1ap  
readt lá.*

(h) Both of us. *Sinn a1aon.*

Both of you. *Sib a1aon.*

Both of them. *S1a1o a1aon, 1a1o a1aon.*

616.

## Further Examples.

He is ignorant <i>of</i> Irish.	Ṭá ré ainbhíoraḁ inṛ an nṣaeḁúilṣ.
The like of him.	Ḃ leicḁéiro (his like).
Such a thing as this.	Ḃ leicḁéiro reo de muo.
Don't be afraid <i>of</i> me.	Ná bíoḁ eadlaort róimam.
A friend <i>of</i> mine.	Capa ḁom.
A friend of yours.	Capa ḁuit.
A horse <i>of</i> mine.	Capall liom.
A horse of Brian's.	Capall le ḁrian.
I have no doubt <i>of</i> it.	Ní fuil ainḁar aṣam aip.
A man of great strength.	Ṽear ip móip neapṫ.
Oisín of mighty strength and vigour.	Oipín ba ṫreun neapṫ a'r luṫ.
(ba is the past tense of ip in the previous sentence.)	
I think much of it.	Ṭá meap móip aṣam aip.

## CHAPTER VII.

## Classification of the Uses of the Prepositions.

617.

aṣ, AT.

## 1. To denote possession (a) with ṫá.

Ṭá ṛṣian aṣam.	I have a knife.
Ṭá aicḁe aṣam aip an ḁreap roin.	I know that man.



618.

AR, ON, UPON.

1. Literal use:  $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta\pi$   $\mu\beta\omicron\rho\omicron$ , on the table.

2. In adverbial phrases:

## (a) TIME.

 $\Delta\pi$   $\beta\alpha\iota\iota$ , just now, by and by.  $\Delta\pi$   $\rho\epsilon\alpha\theta$ , during. $\iota\acute{\alpha}$   $\Delta\pi$   $\iota\acute{\alpha}$ , day by day. $\Delta\pi$   $\mu\alpha\iota\omicron\iota\eta$ , in the morning. $\Delta\pi$   $\upsilon\alpha\iota\mu\omicron$ , by times. $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta\pi$   $\iota\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\iota$ , immediately.

## (b) PLACE.

 $\Delta\pi$   $\beta\iota\tau$ , in existence, at all. $\Delta\pi$   $\epsilon\acute{\upsilon}\iota$ , behind. $\Delta\pi$   $\iota\epsilon\Delta\pi$ , $\Delta\pi$   $\rho\gamma\omicron\iota$ , in school. $\Delta\pi$   $\rho\alpha\iota\mu\eta\varsigma$ , } at sea. $\Delta\pi$   $\rho\upsilon\theta$ , throughout, $\Delta\pi$   $\mu\upsilon\iota$ , $\Delta\pi$   $\eta\epsilon\alpha\mu$ , in heaven. $\Delta\pi$   $\iota\acute{\alpha}\pi$ , on the ground. $\Delta\pi$   $\beta\omicron\rho\omicron$ , on board. $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\acute{\iota}$ , on the point of. $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\alpha\iota\alpha\mu$ , } on earth. $\Delta\pi$   $\rho\alpha\theta$ , in length. $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\alpha\iota\mu\alpha\iota$ , } $\Delta\pi$   $\rho\acute{\alpha}\iota\omicron$ ,\* lengthwise. $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\omicron\rho\alpha\tau$ , by (through)  
the door.

$\tau\pi\acute{\iota}$ $\tau\pi\omicron\iota\varsigma\tau\epsilon$	{	$\Delta\pi$ $\rho\alpha\theta$ ( $\rho\acute{\alpha}\iota\omicron$ ),	three feet long.
		$\Delta\pi$ $\iota\epsilon\tau\epsilon\alpha\theta$ ,	„ wide.
		$\Delta\pi$ $\Delta\omicron\iota\mu\omicron$ ,	„ high.
		$\Delta\pi$ $\tau\omicron\omicron\iota\mu\eta$ ,	„ deep.

## (c) CAUSE.

 $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta\theta\beta\alpha\pi$   $\rho\omicron\iota\eta$ , for that reason, therefore.  $\Delta\pi$   $\iota\epsilon\alpha\tau\tau\omicron\mu$ , under oppression. $\Delta\pi$   $\rho\omicron\eta$ , for the sake of. $\Delta\pi$   $\tau\omicron\iota\tau$ , according to the $\Delta\pi$   $\epsilon\alpha\varsigma\iota\alpha$   $\varsigma\omicron$ , for fear that.

will of.

\*  $\Delta\pi$   $\Delta$   $\rho\acute{\alpha}\iota\omicron$ , literally on its length.

ar éigin, hardly, by compulsion.      ar toḡa, at the choice of.

(d) MANNER AND CONDITION.

ar cor ar bit, on any condition.	ar veitb, in the form of.
ar an mór, in the manner.	ar riuḃat, in progress.
ar aḡaró, forward.	ar a laigeaḡ, at least.
aḡaró araḡaró, face to face.	ar air, back.
leaḡ ar leaḡ, side by side.	ar ḡcú, backwards.
ar lapaḡ, ablaze.	ar tapna, breadthwise.
ar cumar, in the power of.	ar fán, }
beaḡán ar beaḡán, little by little.	ar reaḡrán, } astray.
ar cáirve, on credit.	ar meirḡe, drunk.
	ar roḡar, trotting.
	ar iapaḡt, on loan.

3. In numbers :

Trí ar fícró, 23.

Tríomáḡ ar fícró, 23rd.

4. (a) Before the verbal noun, which it eclipses or aspirates to form the past participle active.

Ar ḡunaḡ an roḡair ḡóib      Having shut the door,  
 o' imḡirḡeaḡar.      they went away.

(b) With the possessive adjective a and verbal noun to form perfect participle passive.

Ar n-a cūr i n-eaḡar aḡ, Edited by.

Ar n-a cūr amaḡ aḡ Connraḡ na ḡaeḡitḡe, Pub-  
 lished by the Gaelic League.

## 5. Emotions felt by a person :

Care, sorrow, &c.	Τά ἰμνιῶε, βριόν οἶμ.
Thirst, hunger, need, sickness.	Τά ταρτ, οεῖαρ, εαρβαῖο, τινnear οἶμ.
Fear.	Τά εαγλα, παττόορ οἶμ.
Joy.	Τά λυτῆάιρ, οἶμ.

## 6. In phrases :

Τιοῦλααῖο ἀρ, favour (conferred) <i>on</i> .	Τά βαοῖατ ἀρ, there is danger.
Clon, ἔεαν ἀρ, affection <i>for</i> .	Cumne ἀρ, remembrance <i>of</i> .
Eolar, πιορ, αἰτne ἀρ, knowledge <i>of</i> , acquaintance <i>with</i> .	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">           Capaoro ἀρ, }            ἔεαν ἀρ, }         </div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle; margin-left: 10px;">           complaint            against.         </div>
ἔπῶμ ἀρ, horror of, or disgust with.	Puaat ἀρ, hatred of. Piac ἀρ, debt <i>due from</i> .
Τά ἀνῖαρ αῖαμ ἀρ, I suspect him.	Cumar ἀρ, power <i>over</i> , capacity <i>for</i> .
Cumact ἀρ, power over.	Piacā ἀρ, claim upon.
Buarō ἀρ, victory over.	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">           Oe ceanglat ἀρ, }            O' pīacaiō ἀρ, }            O' ualac ἀρ, }         </div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle; margin-left: 10px;">           of obli-            gation  <i>on</i>.         </div>
onōir ἀρ, honour (given) to.	

In the above phrases the agent is expressed by αῖ where possible, τὰ ἔπῶο, ἔεαν, eolar, cumne, &c., αῖαμ οἶτ.



## 7. ΔΡ is used after various classes of verbs.

(a) Verbs of motion upon or against (*striking, inflicting, &c.*).

Impim pian Δρ.	I punish.
Terizim Δρ (le).	I throw at.
Carad Δρ. }	Met.
Ćarlad Δρ. }	
Carad an fear oim.	I met the man.
Do gab ré de clocaib oicta.	He threw stones at them.

(b) After the verb **BEIRIM**.

Beirim Δρ.	I call (name), (Δρ before person), induce, persuade, compel a person (to do something).
Beirim iarraict Δρ.	I attempt (something or to do something).
Beirim díol Δρ.	I requite, repay (a person).
Beirim* fá n-deada Δρ,	I cause, make (a person do something).
Beirim grád Δρ.	I love (fall in love with), &c.
Beirim míniugad Δρ.	I explain.

(c) After the verb **BEIRIM**.

Beirim Δρ . . . . Δρ.	I catch, seize (a person) by (the hand, &c.).
Beirim Δρ.	I overtake, I catch.
Beirim breiteamnar Δρ,	I judge, pass judgment on.
Beirim buaid Δρ.	I conquer.

---

\* Cuirim may be used in this sense.

**(d) After verbs of Praying, Beseeching, Appealing to.**

Լաքսամ ար.	I ask, entreat (a person).
Տարօմ ար.	I pray <i>for</i> (sometimes I pray <i>to</i> ); but generally տարօմ ըսմ Ծէ ար ըն &c. I pray to God for.
Իմբիցիմ ար.	I beseech.

**(e) After verbs of Speaking about, Thinking of, Treating of, Writing of, &c.**

Լաժբամ ար, I speak of.	Տնուանիմ ար, I think of.
Երձեռամ ար, I treat of.	Տգրիծամ ար, I write of,
Ըմնուցիմ ար, I remember.	or about.

**(f) Verbs of looking at :**

Բեւեւամ ար or Եարեւամ ար. I look at.

**(g) Verbs of threatening, complaining, offending, displeasing, &c.**

Ծաջրամ ար.	I threaten.
Տօւլիմ ար.	I am troublesome to.
Տեւիմ լօժտ ար.	I find fault with.

**(h) Verbs of concealing, neglecting, hindering, forbidding, refusing, &c.**

Շեւիմ ար.	I conceal from.
Եօրեարջամ ար.	I hinder or forbid.
Բաւուցիմ ար.	I neglect.

(i) Verbs of **protecting, guarding, guaranteeing**  
**against.**

Seacáin tú féin ar an oipucail rin.	Take care of yourself from that car.
Seacáin do lám ar an scloic rin.	Take care! That stone will hurt your hand.

8. (a) *Cuirim* is used with verbal nouns and adverbial  
phrases beginning with *ar* :

<i>Cuirim</i> ar cuit.	I put in a tremble.
<i>Cuirim</i> ar comeádo.	I put on one's guard.
<i>Cuirim</i> ar reacrán.	I set astray.
<i>Cuirim</i> ar cáirroe.	I put off, delay, postpone.
<i>Cuirim</i> ar gcúl.	I put aside.
<i>Cuirim</i> ar neimnío.	I reduce to nothing, I annihilate.

(b) Also with many nouns :—

<i>Cuirim</i> ceirt ar.	I question.
<i>Cuirim</i> comaoim ar.	I do a kindness to.
<i>Cuirim</i> } <i>Caitim</i> }	crainn ar (tar). I cast lots for.
<i>Cuirim</i> cuma ar.	
<i>Cuirim</i> gairim (fior) ar.	I send for.
<i>Cuirim</i> lám ar.	I set about.
<i>Cuirim</i> leigear ar.	I apply a remedy to.
<i>Cuirim</i> luirdéach ar.	I lay a snare for.
<i>Cuirim</i> moitl ar.	I delay.
<i>Cuirim</i> toirmeasg ar.	I hinder.
<i>Cuirim</i> imirdé ar.	I beseech.

9. *Šnīm* is used with many nouns meaning "I inflict...on."

<i>Šnīm bašar ap.</i>	I threaten.
<i>Šnīm buairōneavō ap.</i>	I trouble.
<i>Šnīm caravō ap.</i>	I complain of.
<i>Šnīm eugcōir ap.</i>	I wrong.
<i>Šnīm feall ap.</i>	I act treacherously towards.
<i>Šnīm rmaēt ap.</i>	I exercise authority over, I restrain.
<i>Šnīm breiteamnar ap.</i>	I judge, pass judgment upon.
<i>Šnīm faipe ap.</i>	I watch.

## 619. AS, OUT OF, FROM.

1. **Literal use** : out of, from, &c.

<i>Čuairō pé ap an tiš.</i>	He went out of the house.
<i>Out ap an mbeačairō.</i>	To depart from life.

2. With various other verbs :

<i>Ōuirišim ap covlaō.</i>	I arouse from sleep.
<i>Čuipim ap reitō.</i>	I dispossess.
<i>Čročaim ap.</i>	I hang from.
<i>Čuipim apam.</i>	I utter (a shriek, &c.).
<i>Leišim ap.</i>	I let off.
<i>Sguoraim ap.</i>	I erase from.
<i>Tuitim ap a čéite.</i>	To fall asunder.
<i>Tappainš ap a čéite.</i>	To pull asunder.

3. To express **origin, cause; ground of proof; confidence, trust in :**

Αρ ἅαυ ἀπὸ.	From every quarter.
Σοῦαυ το ὕαυτ αρ.	Derive benefit from.
Αν ῤάτ αρ.	The reason why.
Αρ το Ϥαυ.	Henceforth.
Ιρ Ϥοττυρ αρ.	It is evident from.
Ιοντυγτε αρ.	Inferable from.
Μυμγγιν αρ.	Confidence in.

4. After verbs, of **boasting** or **taking pride in :**

Μαοιῶμ αρ.	I boast of.
ῤιόρμαρ αρ.	Glorying in.
Λάνμαρ αρ ῤέιν.	Full of himself.

620.      ὕυν (cum), TOWARDS.

1. Cum is used after **verbs of motion :**

ὕαυτὸ ῤέ ὕυν αν τγγε.	He went towards the house.
ἕυρ ὕυν ῤαγγγγε.	To put to sea.

2. Before **verbal noun to express purpose :**

ἕαμγγ ῤέ ὕυν αν ἕαυαυ	He came to sell the horse.
το ὀίολ.	

## 3. In Phrases, as :

Tabairt éum críche.	To bring to pass.
Tabaim éugam.	I take for myself.
Cup éum báir.	To put to death.
Leis éum báir.	Let die.
Steirte éum oibre.	Prepared for work.
Éum go.	In order that.
Suirim éum.	I pray to.
Óul éum oligeadó.	To go to law.

## 621.           oe, FROM, OUT OF.

## 1. Literal use :

Uaimin oe.	I take from.
Éirísim oe.	I arise from.
Tuitim oe.	I fall from.
Sgaoilim oe.	I loose from (anything).

## 2. Partitive use:

Óiiong oe na daoimib.	Some of the people.
Óuine oe na fearaib.	One of the men.
fearveumintir Macgáimna.	One of the O'Mahoney's.

Often before the relative it is equivalent to a superlative relative :

Óeuppad gac níó o' 4	I will give everything I
bruil agam.	have.



ἵρ ἐ ἀν ῥεαρ ἵρ ἀοιῖοε ὅ' ἀ ὄρασαρ ῥαμῆ.	He is the tallest man I ever saw.
ἡί μαίτ λειῖρ ἡίὸ ὅ' ἀ ὅτ' οὐς- αιῖρ ὅό.	He does not like anything you gave him.

### 3. In the following phrases:

ὅε ὄρ' ἔ, because	ὅ' ἀίῖρτε, for certain
ὅ' εἰσῖα ῖο, lest	ὅε ῖνᾶτ, usually
ὅ' ἀοιῖρ, of age	ὅε ῖνᾶοῖ, in effect
ὅε ῖοιῖρ, perpetually	ὅε μ' ἵῖτ, to my knowledge
ὅε ὄρ' οὐμ, owing to	ὅε ὄίτ, } for lack of,
ὅ' εἰῖρ, after	ὅ' εἰρῖοιῖρ, } want of
ὅε ὄεοιῖ, willingly	ὅ' ἀίῖρὄεοιῖ, unwillingly,
ὅε ῖῖῖτ ἑ, in expectation	in spite of
of	ὅε ῖοιῖρ, concerning

### 4. After following verbs, &c.:

ῥᾶῥῥῖῖῖῖ ὅε.	I ask (enquire) of.
ἑἰἑἑἑἑ ὅε.	I adhere to.
ἑἰἰἰἰἰ ὅε (ἑ).	Filled with.
ἑἰἑ ὅε.	Full of.
ῖῖῖῖ ῖῖῖῖῖῖ ὅε.	I mention.
ῖῖῖῖ ῖῖῖῖῖ ὅε.	I make use of.
ῖῖῖῖ ... ὅε ...	I make ... out of (from) ...
ἑἰῖῖ ὅᾶοῖ	I let slip.

5. To translate “with,” &c., in phrases like ὅε ἑἰῖῖ,  
with a leap, at a bound.

622.

ῶΟ, ΤΟ, FOR.

## 1. Literal use :

## (a) After adjectives (generally with ἵρ) :

cinnτε ῶο,	certain for (a person).
cōir ῶο,	right for (a person).
éigean ῶο,	necessary for.
maic ῶο,	good for.
peair ῶο,	better for.

## (b) After nouns :

(ῶul) ἰ ποcair ῶο,	for the advantage of.
(ἵρ) beata ῶό,	(is) his life.
(ἵρ) acair ῶό,	(is) his father.

## (c) After verbs :

Διcνῖμ ῶο, I command.	Cinnῖμ ῶο, I appoint for.
ὑπονῖμ ῶο (air) I present to.	Comairῖμ ῶο, I advise.
ῶeónuḡim ῶο, I vouchsafe to.	ῶiúltaim ῶο, I renounce.
ῖóḡram ῶο, I announce to.	ῖóḡnam ῶο, I am of use to.
ῖpeaḡram ῶο, I answer.	ḡeallaim ῶο, I promise.
ḡeiltim ῶο, { I obey or do homage to.	léigim ῶο, I allow, let.
	innrin ῶο, I tell.
Óruiḡim ῶο, I order.	Ῥairbeánaim ῶο, } I show
	Ῥearbánaim ῶο, }
ḡabaim ῶο cōraib, I trample.	Coigim ῶο, I spare.

## 2. To express the agent:

After the verbal noun, preceded by  $\Delta\eta$ ,  $\Delta\zeta$ , &c.:

$\Delta\eta$   $\tau\epsilon\alpha\acute{\epsilon}\tau$   $\alpha\eta\eta\rho\omicron$   $\tau\acute{o}\iota\theta$ .      On their arrival here.

With the participle of necessity, participles in  
ion, &c.:

$\eta\acute{\iota}$   $\mu\omicron\lambda\tau\alpha$   $\acute{\omicron}\mu\iota\tau$   $\acute{\epsilon}$ .      He must not be praised  
by you.

$\eta\rho$   $\acute{\epsilon}$   $\rho\acute{\iota}\eta$   $\eta\rho$   $\mu\omicron\upsilon\acute{\epsilon}\alpha\eta\tau\alpha$   $\acute{\omicron}\mu\iota\tau$ .      That's what you ought to  
do.

3. For its use in connection with the verbal noun see  
pars. 563, 568, 570.

## 623.

$\rho\acute{\alpha}$  or  $\rho\acute{\epsilon}$ , UNDER, ABOUT, CONCERNING.

1. Literal use: as,

$\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\rho\acute{\epsilon}$   $\rho\acute{\alpha}$  'n  $\mu\omicron\upsilon\rho\omicron$ .      It is under the table.

2.  $\rho\acute{\alpha}$  is used in forming the **multiplicatives**:

$\Delta$   $\tau\acute{\rho}\acute{\iota}$   $\rho\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\acute{o}$ , twice three.

$\Delta$   $\tau\acute{o}$   $\rho\acute{\epsilon}$   $\acute{\epsilon}\alpha\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta$ , four times two.

3. In adverbial phrases:

$\rho\acute{\alpha}$   $\acute{\epsilon}\omicron\mu\alpha\eta$ , (keeping) for.       $\rho\acute{\alpha}$   $\iota\epsilon\iota\tau$ , separately.

$\rho\acute{\alpha}$   $\acute{\omicron}\epsilon\omicron$ , at last.       $\rho\acute{\alpha}$   $\acute{\omicron}\epsilon\iota\eta\epsilon\alpha\tau\acute{o}$ , at last.

$\rho\acute{\alpha}$   $\rho\epsilon\alpha\acute{\epsilon}$ , individually,       $\rho\acute{\alpha}$   $\mu\alpha\eta$ . just so (as).  
separately.

624.

ΣΑΝ, WITHOUT.

1. Literal use :

Σαν πινγinn im πόσα.

Without a penny in my  
pocket.2. To express *not* before the verbal noun :

Αβair teir Σαν τελεετ.

Tell him not to come.

625.

ΣΟ, WITH.

1. This preposition used only in a few phrases :

generally before τειετ, *a half*.

Μιλε Σο τειετ.

A mile and a half.

Στατ Σο τειετ.

A yard and a half.

626.

ΣΟ, TO, TOWARDS.

1. Literal use : motion, as—

Σο luimneac.

To or towards Limerick.

2. In Phrases :

Ο uair Σο η-uair.

From hour to hour.

Ο nóm Σο céite.

From evening to evening.

Ο marom Σο η-oróce.

From morning till night.

627. 1 (in, ann), IN, INTO (*Eclipsin*),

1. Of time :

1nṛ an tSamhraid. In Summer.

2. Of motion to a place :

1aṛ tceadt 1 n-Éiminn do Patrick having come into  
ṛáoirais. Ireland.

3. Of rest at a place :

Ṭá ré 1 n'Doirie. He is in Derry.

4. In following phrases :

1 n-aoiṇfeadt le, along with. 1 n-aḡairṑ, against.  
1 nṑairṑ, after. 1 ḡceann, at end of.  
1 ḡcoinne, against. 1 ḡcomair, in front of.  
1 ṑroḡair, in company with. 1 mearḡ, among.  
1 tṑimḡioll, about.

5. After words expressing esteem, respect, liking, &c.,  
for something :

Ṭúil 1 n-ḡr. Desire for gold.

6. Used predicatively after Ṭá :

Ṭáim im' fear láirir anoir. I am a strong man now.

7. In existence, extant :

1ṛ bpeáḡ an aimṛir atá It's fine weather we're  
ann. having

ní cóna tuit túl amac 7 an aimsir fuar atá ann  
anoir.

You ought not to go out *considering* the cold  
weather we have now.

8. Used after *ta* to express "to be able."

ní bíonn ann féin iompóð. He cannot turn.

9. After *cuir*, *beir*, *tuit*, in phrases like :

Cuirim i gcumhne do. I remind.

Tuit i rochtan do. To benefit.

## 628. IOR, BETWEEN, AMONG.

1. Literal use :

nór ior na Románcáið, a custom among the  
Romans.

deitir eatorra, difference between them.

## 2. IOR...ASUS, BOTH...AND.

ior fáiréir agus bóet, both rich and poor.

ior atair agus mac, both father and son.

ior éarócaið agus uanaið, both sheep and lambs.

ior fearaið ir mnaíð, both men and women.

## 629. le, WITH.

1. Literal use, with :

leir an maor, with the steward.



2. With *ir* to denote possession :

<i>ir</i> <i>uompa é.</i>	It is my own. It belongs to me.
<i>Cia leir iad ?</i>	Who owns them ?

3. With *ir* and adjectives to denote "*in the opinion of:*"

<i>ir</i> <i>fiú uim é.</i>	I think it worth my while.
<i>'Oo b' fada leir.</i>	He thought it long.

4. To denote **instrument** or **means** :

<i>b'preató an fuinneóis le cloic.</i>	The window was broken by a stone.
<i>fuarir ré báir leir an ocmair.</i>	He died of hunger.
<i>lorgadó le teimrú é.</i>	He was burned with fire.

5. After verbs or expressions of **motion** :

<i>Amac leir,</i>	Out (he went).
<i>Siadp lib !</i>	Stand back !
<i>'O' imctis rí léicti,</i>	She departed.

6. With verbs of **touching**; **behaviour towards**; **saying to**; **listening to**; **selling to**; **paying to**; **waiting for** :

<i>Éirte uim,</i>	Listen to me.
<i>bainim le,</i>	I touch.
<i>labhairm le,</i>	I speak to.
<i>'Óiolair an bó leir,</i>	I sold the cow to him.
<i>ná fan uim,</i>	Do not wait for me.

7. After words expressing comparison with, likeness to, severance from, union with, peace with, war with, expectation of.

ṬĀ ré cōm āpō uōm.	He is as tall as I.
ṬĀ ré cōp̄māit teat.	He is like you.
Ṭō rṣar ré teo.	He separated from them.

8. With verbal noun to express purpose, intention (see pars. 567, 569).

9. In following phrases :—

te h-āḡarō, for (use of),	te cōp, near, beside.
te h-uēt, with a view to.	lām te, near.
te h-ār, beside.	map don te, along with.
te pānarō, downward.	taōb te, beside.

### 630.            mār, LIKE TO, AS.

1. Literal use : *as, like to*.

map rin, thus	āḡur map rin tōe, and so on.
Ṭō ḡlac ré map céite ī.	He took her for a spouse.
pā map aṭubāit ré,	(according) as he said.

2. Before relative particle *ā*, it is equivalent to *as, how, where, &c.*

an āit map ā pātō ré,	the place where he was.
-----------------------	-------------------------

3. For an idiomatic use of *mār*, see par. 353.

## 631. Ó, FROM, SINCE.

## 1. Since (of time) : as,

ó éúr, from the beginning.      ó íoin, ago.

Conjunction : as,

Ó naé b'acair nua ar bít, tángar abaithe arís.

Since I saw nothing I came home again.

## 2. Of place, motion from :

Ó Éirinn,      from Erin.

## 3. In a modal sense :

óo époróe,      with all thy heart.

boét ó (i) rriopair,      poor in spirit.

4. After words expressing severance from, distance from, going away from, turning from, taking from, exclusion from, cleansing, defending, protecting, healing. alleviating.

## 632. ÓS, OVER.

Used only in a few phrases as :

ór cionn, above, over.      bun ór cionn, upside down,

ór íriot, silently, secretly.      ór árho loudly.

## 633.

## ROIÑ, BEFORE.

## 1. Of time :

Θεῖς νόμιτο ποῖν (cun) Ten minutes to three.  
 α τῇ.

Roiñe reo.

Before this, heretofore,  
 formerly.

Roiñe pin.

Previously.

2. Of fleeing before, from; coming in front of; lying  
 before one (=awaiting); putting before one  
 (=proposing to oneself):

Κίβέ κύπειρ ποῖνε ἐ reo Whoever proposes to do  
 το οὐναῖν. this.

Ὀῖ ἀν γρηφῆας ἀγ μὲ ποῖν The hare was running  
 να κοναῖβ. from the hounds.

3. After expressions of fear, dislike, welcome, &c.:

Ἡὰ βίος ἐστιά οὔτ ρόμπα. Do not be afraid of them.  
 Παῖτε ρόματ (ρόμαῖβ)! Welcome!

## 634.

## ΤΑΡ, BEYOND, OVER, PAST.

## 1. Of motion (place and time):

Λέμ ρέ τὰρ ἀν μβαλλ. He leaped over the wall.

Ἀν μῖ reo ῥαβ τορμιν. Last month.

2. Figuratively: "in preference to," "beyond."

Τὰρ μαρ βῖ ρέ θεῖς Compared with what it was  
 μβλιαθνα ρίεαθ ὁ ροῖν. 30 years ago.

Τὰρ μαρ βυθ ὀλιγέεαθ ὁό. Beyond what was lawful  
 for him,

3. In following phrases :

ῥούτ ταρ, transgress.

τεὰὐτ ταρ, refer to, treat of

ταρ εἶρ, after.

ἐταρ αἶρ, back.

Ταρ ἐεανν ὅο, notwith-  
standing.

### 635. ΤΡΕ, (ΤΡΙ), THROUGH, BY MEANS OF.

1. Physically, through :

Τρέ η-α λάμαιβ.

Through his hands.

2. Figuratively, “owing to” :

Τρίο ριν.

Owing to that.

N.B.—In the spoken language τρίο is generally used instead of τρέ or τρεαρ.

### 636. υμ, ABOUT, AROUND.

1. Time : υμ ἐράτνόνα, in the evening.

2. Place : υμ αν τῖς, around the house.

3. About : of putting or having clothing on.

Ὅο εἰρεατοαρ umpa α They put on their clothes.  
ῥουο ἐατοαῖς.

4. Cause : υιμε ριν, therefore.

## PARSING.

637. Α. Parse each word in the following sentence :  
 Δοειρ Seumar ζυρ τειρ πέιν αν capatt το υι αige  
 (Prep. Grade, 1900).

Δοειρ An irreg. trans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, analytic form of the verb *οειρ*um (verbal noun, *ραδ*).

Seumar A proper noun, first declen., genitive *Seumair*, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., nom. case, being subject of *δοειρ*.

ζυρ A conjunction used before the past tense: compounded of *ζο* and *πο*.

[’υ] The dependent form, past tense, of the verb *ιρ*.

τειρ A prepositional pronoun (or a pronominal preposition), 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender. Compounded of *τε* and *πέ*.

πέιν An indeclinable noun, added to *τειρ* for the sake of emphasis.

αν The definite article, nom. sing. masc., qualifying the noun *capatt*.

capatt A com. noun, first declen., genitive *capattu*, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and nom. case, being the subject of the suppressed verb [’υ].



- το A particle used as a sign of the past tense, causing aspiration; but here it has also the force of a relative.
- ἔϊ An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood past tense, analytic form of the verb τάμ (verbal noun, βεῖτ).
- αἷγε A prepositional pronoun, 3rd sing., masc. gender, compounded of αἷ and ε.

B. Parse the following sentence: Το εἰς ῥί πόο μόνα ἀρ θεαρῖ-λαρᾶ ἰ η-οῖον τῖγε να ρκοιτε μαῖοιν λαε beatcame. (Junior Grade, 1900).

- το A particle used as the sign of the past tense, causing aspiration.
- εἰς A reg. trans. verb, indic. mood. past tense, analytic form of the verb εἰς (verbal noun, εἰς).
- ῥί A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend., conjunctive form, nominative case, being the subject of the verb εἰς.
- πόο A com. noun, first declen., gen. πόο, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, accusative case, being the object of the verb εἰς.

- móna** A common noun, third declension, nom. **móin**, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gender, and genitive case, governed by the noun **róo**.
- ap** A preposition, governing the dative case.
- ceapṣ-tapaṭ** A compound verbal noun, genitive **ceapṣ-tapṭa**, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition **ap**.
- ı** A preposition, governing the dative case, and causing eclipsis.
- oın** A com. noun, first declens., gen. **oın**, 3rd pers. sing. masc. gender and dative case, governed by preposition **ı**.
- (N.B.—This word may also be second declension).
- tiḡe** An irreg. com. noun, nom. **teac**, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., genitive case, governed by the noun **oın**.
- na** The definite article, genitive sing. feminine, qualifying **pcote**.
- pcote** A common noun, second declension, nom. **pcot**, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gen. and genitive case, governed by the noun **tiḡe**.

μαῖοιν     A com. noun, second declension, gen. μαῖοι, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gender, and dative case, governed by the preposition ἀπ (understood).

ἰαε-beatτῆι     A compound proper noun, nom. ἰα beatτῆι, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, and genitive case, governed by the noun μαῖοιν.

C. Parse: τῶν ἀγούτων ἀνδρῶν (Junior, '98).

τῶν     An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, 1st pers. sing., synthetic form, of τᾶ (verbal noun, βεῖν).

ἀγ     A prep., governing the dative case.

ούτων     A verbal noun, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition ἀγ.

ούτων     A noun (dative case, governed by τοῦ understood) used as a preposition, governing the genitive case.

ἀν     The definite article, gen. sing. masc., qualifying the noun ἀνδρῶν.

ἀνδρῶν     A common noun, first declen., nom. ἀνδρᾶς, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, and genitive case governed by οὗτων.

D. Parse:  $\eta\acute{\iota}$   $\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\eta$   $\acute{o}\upsilon\tau\epsilon$   $\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\omicron\omicron$   $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\acute{\omicron}$ .

- $\eta\acute{\iota}$       A negative adverb, causing aspiration, modifying the suppressed verb  $\iota\tau$ .
- $[\iota\tau]$     The assertive verb, present tense, absolute form,
- $\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\eta$     A common adjective, positive degree, comparative  $\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha$ , qualifying the phrase  $\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\omicron\omicron$   $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\acute{\omicron}$ .
- $\acute{o}\upsilon\tau\epsilon$     A prep. pronoun, 2nd pers. sing. compound of  $\tau\omicron\omicron$  and  $\tau\acute{\upsilon}$ .
- $\acute{\epsilon}$         A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., nom. case, disjunctive form, being the subject of the suppressed verb  $\iota\tau$ .
- $\tau\omicron\omicron$        A preposition, causing aspiration, and governing the dative case.
- $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\acute{\omicron}$ .    A verbal noun, genitive  $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\iota\tau\epsilon$ , 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition  $\tau\omicron\omicron$ .

N.B.— $\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\omicron\omicron$   $\beta\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha\acute{\omicron}$  is the subject of the *sentence*.

E. Parse:  $\tau\acute{\epsilon}\alpha\iota\mu\iota\varsigma$   $\rho\acute{\epsilon}$   $\tau\epsilon$   $\kappa\alpha\pi\alpha\lambda\iota$   $\alpha$   $\acute{\epsilon}\alpha\eta\eta\alpha\acute{\omicron}$ .

- $\tau\acute{\epsilon}\alpha\iota\mu\iota\varsigma$     An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, past tense, 3rd pers. sing. of the verb  $\tau\iota\varsigma\iota\mu$  (verbal noun,  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\acute{\omicron}\tau$ ).

- ré A pers. pron, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen.,  
 conjunctive form, nom. case, being  
 the subject of táinig.
- le A preposition governing the dative  
 case.
- capall A common noun, first declens. gen.  
 capall, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen.  
 and dative case governed by le.
- Δ The softened form of the preposition  
 oo, which causes aspiration, and  
 governs the dative case.
- ceannac. A verbal noun, genitive ceannuighe,  
 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed  
 by the preposition Δ.

## IDIOMS.

τᾶ...ἄγωμ, I HAVE.

**638.** As already stated there is no verb "*to have*" in Irish. Its place is supplied by the verb τᾶ followed by the preposition ἄγ. The direct object of the verb "*to have*" in English becomes the subject of the verb τᾶ in Irish: as, I have a book. τᾶ βιβλίον ἄγωμ. The literal translation of the Irish phrase is "*a book is at me.*"

This translation appears peculiar at first sight, but it is a mode of expression to be found in other languages. Most students are

familiar with the Latin phrase "*Est mihi pater.*" I have a father (lit. there is a father to me); and the French phrase *Ce livre est à moi.* I own this book (lit. This book is to me).

We give here a few sentences to exemplify the idiom:—

He has the book.	ṬḶ an leabhar aige.
I have not it.	Ní fuil ré agam.
Have you my pen?	An bhfuil mo péann agat?
The woman had the cow.	Bhí an bó ag an mneoi.
The man had not the horse.	Ní raib an capall ag an bpeari.
Will you have a knife to-morrow?	An mbéid tú an agat i mbáire?
He would not have the dog.	Ní biaó an maópa aige.
We used to have ten horses.	Dó bhíod deic scapall againn.

### IS LIOM, I OWN.

**639.** As the verb "*have*" is translated by ṬḶ and the preposition ag, so in a similar manner the verb "*own*" is translated by the verb IS and the preposition le. Not only is the verb "*to own*," but also all expressions conveying the idea of *ownership*, such as: The book belongs to me: the book is mine, &c.; are translated by the same idiom.

I own the book.	} is liom an leabhar.
The book is mine.	
The book belongs to me.	

The horse was John's.	}	Dá le Seagán an capall.
The horse belonged to John.		
John owned the horse.		

Notice the position of the words. In translating the verb "*have*" the verb *τά* is separated from the preposition *ας* by the noun or pronoun; but in the case of "*own*" the verb *ιρ* and the preposition *le* come together. (See par. 589, &c.)

I have the book.                      *Τά an leabap asam.*

I own the book.                      *ιρ uom an leabap.*

In translating such a phrase as "*I have only two cows*," the noun generally comes after the preposition *ας*: so that this is an exception to what has been said above.

I have only two cows.                      *Μι fuil asam ac̄c̄ d̄ā buin.*

## I KNOW.

640. There is no verb or phrase in Irish which can cover the various shades of meaning of the English verb "*to know*." First, we have the very commonly used word *feadap* (or *feadap mé*), *I know*; but this verb is used only after negative or interrogative particles, and has only a few forms. Again, we have the verb *aitnígim*, *I know*; but this verb can only be used in the sense of *recognising*. Finally we have the three very commonly used phrases, *τά eolap asam*,



τὰ αἰθε ἀγᾶμ, and τὰ ἄ πῖορ ἀγᾶμ, all meaning “*I know*;” but these three expressions have three different meanings which must be carefully distinguished.

Whenever the English verb “*know*” means “*to know by heart*,” or “*to know the character of a person*,” “*to know by study*,” &c., use the phrase τὰ εὐλαρ ἀγᾶμ...ἀρ.

Whenever “*know*” means “*to recognise*,” “*to know by appearance*,” “*to know by sight*,” &c., use the phrase τὰ αἰθε ἀγᾶμ...ἀρ. This phrase is usually restricted to *persons*.

When “*know*” means “*to know by mere information*,” “*to happen to know*,” as in such a sentence as “*Do you know did John come in yet?*” use the phrase τὰ ἄ πῖορ ἀγᾶ, e.g. Ὀφούτ ἄ πῖορ ἀγᾶτ ἀν ὀτάνις Σεᾶγᾶν ἱρτεᾶτ πόρ?

As a rule young students experience great difficulty in selecting the phrases to be used in a given case. This difficulty arises entirely from not striving to grasp the real meaning of the English verb. For those who have already learned French it may be useful to state that as a general rule τὰ εὐλαρ ἀγᾶμ corresponds to *je sais* and τὰ αἰθε ἀγᾶμ to *je connais*.

τὰ αἰθε ἀγᾶμ ἀρ ἀττ ní φούτ εὐλαρ ἀγᾶμ ἀρ. *Je le connais mais je ne le sais pas.* I know him by sight but I do not know his character. “*Do you know*

*that man going down the road ?*" Here the verb "*know*" simply means recognise, therefore the Irish is: *b'fuil aithe a'gac ar an b'fear roin a'á a'g out ríor an bótar?* If you say to a fellow-student "*Do you know your lessons to-day?*" You mean "*Do you know them by rote?*" or "*Have you studied them?*" Hence the Irish would be: "*b'fuil eolar a'gac ar do éadctannaib iníu?*"

Notice also the following translations of the verb *know*.

<i>ir maic ir eol dom,</i>	'Tis well I know.
<i>ir ríorac (feardac) dom,</i>	I know.
<i>deirim an fuo a'á ar</i>	I say what I know.
<i>eolar a'gam,</i>	

### I LIKE, I PREFER.

641. "*I like*" and "*I prefer*" are translated by the expressions *ir maic (áil, aic) uíom* and *ir fearr uíom* (it is good with me; and, it is better with me).

I like milk.	<i>ir maic uíom bainne.</i>
He prefers milk to wine.	<i>ir fearr leir bainne ná fíon.</i>
Does the man like meat?	<i>An maic leir an b'fear feoil?</i>
Did you like that?	<i>Ar maic leat é rin?</i>
I liked it.	<i>Ua maic uíom é.</i>
We did not like the water.	<i>Níor maic linn an t-uirge.</i>

642. If we change the preposition "*le*" in the above sentences, for the preposition "*do*," we get

another idiom. “It is really good for,” “It is of benefit to.” 1ṛ maṛt òom é. It is good for me; (*whether I like it or not*).

He does not like milk but it is good for him.

ní maṛt leṛ bannne áct 1ṛ maṛt òó é.

**N.B.**—In these and like idiomatic expressions the preposition “le” conveys the person’s own ideas and feelings, whether these are in accordance with fact or not. 1ṛ fíú uom òut go h-Albain. I think it is worth my while to go to Scotland (*whether it is really the case or not*). 1ṛ móṛ uom an luác pòin. I think that a great price. 1ṛ ruapac uom é ṛm. I think that trifling (*another person may not*).

The word “think” in such phrases is not translated into Irish.

1ṛ fíú òuit òut go h-Albain. It is really worth your while to go to Scotland (*whether you think so or not*).

τἰς uom, I CAN, I AM ABLE.

643. Although there is a regular verb *ṛeuoim*, meaning *I can, I am able*, it is not always used. The two other expressions often used to translate the English verb “*I can*,” are τἰς uom and 1ṛ féroir uom.

The following examples will illustrate the uses of the verbs.

### Present Tense.

<p> <math>\rho\epsilon\upsilon\theta\alpha\iota\mu</math>, <math>\tau\iota\varsigma</math> <math>\iota\omicron\mu</math>* or  <math>\iota\rho</math> <math>\rho\acute{\epsilon}\iota\omicron\iota\rho</math> <math>\iota\omicron\mu</math>,† </p>	}	I can, or am able.
<p> <math>\rho\epsilon\upsilon\theta\alpha\iota\mu</math> <math>\tau\acute{\upsilon}</math>, <math>\tau\iota\varsigma</math> <math>\iota\epsilon\alpha\tau</math> or  <math>\iota\rho</math> <math>\rho\acute{\epsilon}\iota\omicron\iota\rho</math> <math>\iota\epsilon\alpha\tau</math>. </p>	}	Thou canst or art able.
<p> <math>\&amp;c.</math>,                      <math>\&amp;c.</math> </p>		

### Negative.

<p> <math>\eta\acute{\iota}</math> <math>\rho\epsilon\upsilon\theta\alpha\iota\mu</math>, <math>\eta\acute{\iota}</math> <math>\epsilon\tau\iota\varsigma</math> <math>\iota\omicron\mu</math>; or  <math>\eta\acute{\iota}</math> <math>\rho\acute{\epsilon}\iota\omicron\iota\rho</math> <math>\iota\omicron\mu</math>. </p>	}	I cannot, I am not able.
--	---	--------------------------

### Interrogative.

<p> <math>\Delta\eta</math> <math>\nu\tau\iota\varsigma</math> <math>\iota\epsilon\alpha\tau</math>? or  <math>\Delta\eta</math> <math>\rho\acute{\epsilon}\iota\omicron\iota\rho</math> <math>\iota\epsilon\alpha\tau</math>? </p>	}	Can you? or are you able?
---	---	---------------------------

### Negative Interrogative.

<p> <math>\eta\Delta\epsilon</math> <math>\nu\tau\iota\varsigma</math> <math>\iota\epsilon\iota\rho</math>? or  <math>\eta\Delta\epsilon</math> <math>\rho\acute{\epsilon}\iota\omicron\iota\rho</math> <math>\iota\epsilon\iota\rho</math>? </p>	}	Can he not? or is he not able?
---	---	--------------------------------

### Past Tense.

<p> <math>\Theta'</math> <math>\rho\epsilon\upsilon\theta\alpha\rho</math>, <math>\epsilon\acute{\alpha}\iota\mu\iota\varsigma</math> <math>\iota\omicron\mu</math>, or  <math>\nu\omicron</math> <math>\beta'</math> <math>\rho\acute{\epsilon}\iota\omicron\iota\rho</math> <math>\iota\omicron\mu</math>. </p>	}	I could, or was able.
---	---	-----------------------

### Imperfect.

$\Theta'$   $\rho\epsilon\upsilon\theta\alpha\iota\mu$ ,  $\epsilon\tau\iota\varsigma\epsilon\alpha\theta$   $\iota\omicron\mu$ . I used to be able.

\* Literally: It comes with me

† It is possible with me.

**Future.**

φευρατο, τιοφαιτο uom. I shall be able.

**Conditional.**

Ο' φευραινη, το τιοφαιτο }  
uom. } I would be able.

ni φεροιτ leiτ, (He thinks) he cannot.  
ni φεροιτ τοό, He cannot (It is absolutely  
impossible for him).

**I MUST.**

644. The verb "*must*," when it means necessity or duty, is usually translated by the phrase ni φυλαιτ or caiτpτο. This latter is really the third person singular, future tense of caiτim ; but the present and other tenses are also frequently used. It may also be very neatly rendered by the phrase, ιτ ειγειν το (lit. *it is necessary for*).

ni φυλαιτ τοom, caiτpτο με, or }  
ιτ ειγειν τοom. } I must.

ni φυλαιτ τουιτ, caiτpτο τυ, or }  
ιτ ειγειν τουιτ. } You must.

ni φυλαιτ τοό, caiτpτο ρε, or }  
ιτ ειγειν τοό } He must.

&c., &c.

The English phrase "*have to*" usually means "*must*," and is translated like the above : as, *I have to go home now.* Caiτpτο με τουτ Δ βαιτε ανοιρ.

The English verb "*must*," expressing duty or necessity, has no past tense of its own. The English past tense of it would be "*had to*:" as, "*I had to go away then.*" The Irish translation is as follows:—

níor b'fúláir dom, Cáit mé, or } I had to.  
do b'éigean dom.

níor b'fúláir duit. Cáit tú, or } You had to.  
do b'éigean duit.  
&c.,                      &c.

The English verb "*must*" may also express a **supposition**; as in the phrase "*You must be tired.*" The simplest translation of this is "ní fúláir go bfuil tuirre ort," or, "ní fúláir nó tá tuirre ort." The phrase "ir coramail go," meaning "*It is probable that,*" may also be used: as, ir coramail go bfuil tuirre ort.

The English phrase "*must have*" always expresses **supposition**, and is best translated by the above phrase followed by a verb in the past tense, as, "*You must have been hungry,*" ní fúláir go raib ocrair ort. *He must have gone out,* ní fúláir go nveacair ré amad.

ní fúláir gur éuarb (or go nveagairb) ré amad, is used in Munster

## I ESTEEM.

645. *I esteem* is translated by the phrase **Tá meaf agam ar.** Literally, "*I have esteem on.*"



I esteem John.	Ṭá meap aḡam an Seagán.
Did you esteem him ?	Raib meap aḡat air ?
He says that he greatly esteems you.	Deir ré go bfuil meap móir aighe ortsa.

## I DIE.

**646.** Although there is a regular verb, *eug*, *die*, in Irish it is not often used; the phrase *ḡeibim báir*, *I find death*, is usually employed now. The following examples will illustrate the construction :—

The old man died yesterday.	ḡuair an sean-ḡear báir inoé.
We all die.	ḡeibimid uile báir.
I shall die.	ḡeobhad báir.
They have just died.	Ṭair tar éir báir o'ḡaḡáil.
You must die.	Caitḡir tú báir o'ḡaḡáil.

## I OWE.

**647.** There is no verb “*owe*” in Irish, Its place is supplied by saying “*There is a debt on a person.*”

Ṭá ḡiác* oim.	<i>I owe.</i>
---------------	---------------

Whenever the amount of the debt is expressed the word *ḡiác* is usually omitted and the sum substituted.

He owes a pound.	Ṭá púnt air.
You owe a shilling.	Ṭá ḡsúlling ort.

---

\* The plural of this word, *ḡiáca*, is very frequently used in this phrase.



When the person to whom the money is due is mentioned, the construction is a little more difficult: as, *I owe you a pound* as,  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\pi\acute{\upsilon}\nu\tau$   $\alpha\zeta\alpha\tau$   $\omicron\rho\mu$ , i.e., You have (*the claim of*) a pound on me—the words in brackets being always omitted.

He owes me a crown.	$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ $\kappa\omicron\rho\acute{\omicron}\nu\alpha\mu$ $\alpha\zeta\alpha\mu$ $\alpha\iota\rho$ .
Here is the man to whom	$\text{Seo é an fear } \alpha$ (50)
you owe the money.	$\text{bfuil an } \tau\text{-}\alpha\iota\rho\zeta\epsilon\alpha\theta$
	$\alpha\iota\zeta\epsilon$ $\omicron\rho\tau$ .

### I MEET.

648. The verb “*meet*” is usually translated by the phrase “*there is turned on*,” e.g., “*I meet a man*” is translated by saying “*A man is turned on me*.”  $\kappa\alpha\rho\tau\alpha\rho$   $\text{fear } \omicron\rho\mu$  ( $\iota\omicron\mu$  or  $\acute{\omicron}\omicron\mu$ ); but the phrase  $\text{buailtear}$  (or  $\acute{\tau}\alpha\rho\iota\alpha$ )  $\text{fear } \omicron\rho\mu$  is also used. *I met the woman*,  $\text{do carad an bean } \omicron\rho\mu$  ( $\iota\omicron\mu$  or  $\acute{\omicron}\omicron\mu$ ).

They met two men on the	$\text{do carad beirt fear } \omicron\rho\tau\alpha$
road.	$\alpha\rho$ $\text{an mbótar}$ .

I met John.	$\text{Buail Seagán umam}$ .
-------------	------------------------------

### Physical Sensations.

649. All physical sensations, such as hunger, thirst, weariness, pain, &c., are translated into Irish by saying that “*hunger, thirst, &c., is on a person*,” as, I

am hungry.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  ocpar opm. Literally, *hunger is on me*. He is thirsty.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  tapc air. Literally, *thirst is on him*.

The same idiom is used for emotions, such as pride, joy, sorrow, shame, &c. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

Üfuit ocpar opt?	Are you hungry?
ní fuit ocpar opm anoir.	I am not hungry now.
Üí an-tapc opainn inóé.	We were very thirsty yesterday.
Üí ana tapc opainn inóé.	
Üfuit náipe opta?	Are they ashamed?
Üí náipe an tapocail uirru.	She was very much ashamed.
Üéirö bröön möp air.	He will be very proud.
Raib tuirpe opt?	Were you tired?
ná bíöð eagla opt.	Don't be afraid.
$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ ana éöotlaö opm.	I am very sleepy.
$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ rlaḡöán opt.	You have a cold.

Whenever there is a simple adjective in Irish corresponding to the English adjective of *mental* or *physical sensation*, we have a choice of two constructions, as:—

I am cold.	$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ mé fuar	or $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ fuact* opm.
You are sick.	$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ tú tinn (or breoite)	„ $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ tinneap opt.
I was weary.	Üí mé tuirpeac	„ Üí tuirpe opm.

---

\* Distinguish between rlaḡöán a cold (a disease) and fuact, the cold, coldness (of the weather) and the adjective fuar, cold.

Τά μέ τινν and τά τινnear οpm have not quite the same meaning, Τά μέ τινν means *I feel sick*; but τά τινnear οpm means *I am in some sickness, such as fever, &c.*

### I CANNOT HELP.

**650.** The English phrase "I cannot help that," is translated by saying *I have no help on that*. nī fuit nearc agam air rin. The word leigear, "cure," may be used instead of nearc.

When "*cannot help*" is followed by a present participle in English, use nī  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{féadaim} \\ \text{féioir uim} \end{array} \right\}$  san, with verbal noun: as, *I cannot help laughing*, nī  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{féadaim} \\ \text{féioir uim} \end{array} \right\}$  san saimúe.

### I AM ALONE.

**651.** There are two expressions which translate the English word "alone" in such sentences as I am alone, He is alone, &c., i.e., Táim im donar, or Táim uim féin (I am in my oneship, or I am by (with) myself). He is alone. Tá ré na donar, or Tá ré leir féin. She was alone. Bí sí 'na n-donar, or Bí sí léiti féin. We shall be alone. Béimio 'nár n-donar. or béimio linn féin.

### I ASK.

**652.** The English word "*ask*" has two distinct meanings according as it means "*beseech*" or "*inquire*." In Irish there are two distinct verbs, viz.,

ἵαυμαι, I ask (*for a favour*), and ῥαυμαι, I ask (*for information*). Before translating the word “ask” we must always determine what is its real meaning, and then use ἵαυ or ῥαυ accordingly.

Ask your friend for money. ἵαυ ἀνδρῶν ἀν το  
ἐμῶν.

Ask God for those graces. ἵαυ ἀν τοῖς καὶ τῶν  
ποινῶν καὶ ἐλπίσιν σου.

Ask him what o'clock it is. ῥαυ τοῦ καὶ τοῦ ἑ.  
He asked us who was that. Ὁ ῥαυ τοῦ ὅτιν ἐστὶν  
ἐν τῇ θύρᾳ.

They asked me a question. Ὁ ῥαυ τοῦ ἐστὶν  
τοῦ.

## 653.

## I DO NOT CARE.

I do not care.	ἴ καὶ τοῦ.
It is no affair of mine.	ἴ καὶ τοῦ.
Is it not equal to you?	ἴ καὶ τοῦ;
It is no affair of yours.	ἴ καὶ τοῦ.
You don't care.	ἴ καὶ τοῦ.
He does not care.	ἴ καὶ τοῦ.
It is no affair of his.	ἴ καὶ τοῦ.
We did not care.	ὐ καὶ τοῦ.
It was no affair of ours.	ὐ καὶ τοῦ.
They did not care.	ὐ καὶ τοῦ.

(See what has been said about the prepositions *te* and *to* in the Idiom “I prefer,” par. 642.)

## I OUGHT.

654. “*I ought*” is translated by the phrase *ir cóir* (or *ceart*) *tuom*. You ought, *ir cóir túit*, *ir ceart túit*. We ought to go home, *ir cóir túinn tút a báite*. We ought to have gone home, *ba cóir túinn tút a báite*. As the word “*ought*” has no inflection for the past tense in English, it is necessary to use the *past infinitive in English* to express past time. But as the Irish expression, *ir cóir*, has a past tense (*ba cóir*) the *simple verbal noun* is always used in Irish in such expressions.

Ought you not have gone to    *náir cóir túit tút go*  
Derry with them?                    *Tuise leo?*

He ought not have gone    *níoir cóir óó imteacht*.  
away.

English Dependent Phrases translated by the  
Verbal Noun.

655. Instead of the usual construction, consisting of a verb in a finite tense followed by its subject (a noun or a pronoun), we very frequently meet in Irish with the following construction. The English finite verb is translated by the Irish verbal noun, and the English subject is placed before the verbal noun. If the subject be a noun it is in the nominative *form*, but if a pronoun in the disjunctive *form*.

The following examples will exemplify the idiom:—

I'd prefer *that he should be* **Do b'fearr liom é ro**  
*there rather than my-* **beir ann ná mire.**  
*self.*

Is it not better for us that **Nac fearr dúinn san iad**  
*these should not be in* **ro ro beir in an mbád.**  
*the boat.*

I saw John when he was **Connaic mé Seagán agus**  
*coming home.* **é as teacht a baile.**

I knew him *when I was a* **Ói aithe agam air agus**  
*boy.* **mé im buacail.**

The clock struck *just as* **Do buail an clog agus é**  
*he was coming in.* **as teacht irteac.**

## Idiomatic Expressions.

## CUIR.

Cuir oimpra é.	Say it was I did it.
Cuirimpre ortra é.	I say it was you did it.
Cuir umat (ort).	Dress yourself.
Ćuir an tairt go móir air.	Thirst annoyed him greatly.
Cuirfeadóra d'fíadaib orth rtao.	I'll make you stop.
Cuir iadaill air é (a) t'eanamh.	Make him do it.
Ná cuir orm 7 ní cuirfeao orth.	Don't interfere with me and I will not interfere with you.
Ćuir ré a man.	He tracked him (her, them).
Ćuir ré rtró orm.	He addressed me.
Ćuir ré rpeic (or fupán) orm.	
Ćuirear nóiam a t'eanamh.	I resolved to do it.
Tá cuir ríor (tráct or iomráo) ar an scozao.	There is talk about the war.
Ćuir ré culair éadaisg dá t'eanamh.	He got a suit of clothes made.
Ćuir ré 'na luige orm.	He convinced me of it.
Cuir i gcár sup raigtoir mipe.	Suppose me to be a soldier.
Cuir ar bun.	Established.
Ćuir (bain) ré faoi i gCorcaisg.	He settled down in Cork.
Tá ré ag cuir 'r ag cúiteamh.	He is debating in his mind.



## ΤΑΒΔΑΙΡ.

Ταβαίρ ρυαρ.	Surrender.
Τά ρέ ταβαίρεα.	} He is played out.
Τά ρέ βυαίτε ρυαρ.	
Τα ρέ τυγτα (ταβαίρεα) το'η λοέτ ραν.	He is <i>addicted</i> to that vice.
Ταβαίρ το όρουμ λειρ.	Turn your back to him.
Τυγαρ ρέ νθεάρι(α) αν πολαρ.	I noticed the light.
Τά ρέ ταβαίρεα ρυαρ.	He has been given up for dead.
Τυγ ρέ ρυαρ.	He gave <i>in</i> .
Τά ταβαίρεα ρυαρ αιγε.	He <i>has given in</i> .
Ιρ τοακαιρρίμνε γείτεαδ το ταβαίρε το'ά όέιτε.	It is hard to <i>reconcile</i> truth and falsehood.
Τά ταβαίρε ρυαρ μόρ αιρ.	He is <i>highly educated</i> .

## ΟΕΑΝ.

Οέαν ρυο αρ το μάταιρ.	Obey your mother.
Νί οέανραδ ρέ ρυο ορμ.	He would not <i>oblige</i> me.
Ναέ μαίτ ναέ νθεάριαιρ ρείν έ !	How well you didn't do it yourself !
Ναέ μαίτ ná οέανανν tú ρείν ρυο αρ το μάταιρ ?	Why don't you obey your mother yourself ?
Νυαιρ τυιγεαοαρι α ρεαβαρ το όιμρι (ριννιρ) αν βεαρτ.	When they understood how well you had done the trick.
Οέαν αιρε (το) ταβαίρε τοο γνό ρέιν.	} Mind your own business.
Οέαν το γνό ρέιν.	
Ταβαίρ αιρε τοο γνό ρέιν.)	

ṮḂḂḂ ḂḂ ḂḂ ṮḂ ḂḂḂ Milk the cows.  
(ḂḂḂḂḂ).

ḂḂ ḂḂḂḂḂḂ ḂḂ ṮḂḂḂ Did you shut the door?  
ṮḂ ṮḂḂḂ?

ṮḂ ḂḂ ḂḂ ṮḂḂḂḂ ṮḂḂḂ. He is coming towards us.

### ḂḂḂḂ.

ḂḂḂ (ḂḂḂḂḂ) Ṯ' ḂḂḂḂ How did he *get on*?  
ḂḂ?

ḂḂ Ṯ' ḂḂḂḂ ḂḂ? {What *became* of him?  
{What *happened* to him?

ḂḂḂ ḂḂḂḂḂ ḂḂ ḂḂḂ When something like this  
ḂḂ ḂḂḂ. *happens.*

ḂḂ ḂḂḂḂḂ ṮḂ? } What *will become* of me?  
(ḂḂḂ ḂḂḂḂḂ ṮḂ?) }

### ḂḂ.

ṮḂ' Ḃ ḂḂ ḂḂḂ ṮḂḂ The first person he met  
ḂḂḂ ḂḂ ḂḂ ḂḂḂḂ was ḂḂḂḂ ḂḂḂ.  
ḂḂḂ.

ḂḂ Ḃ ḂḂ ṮḂ' ḂḂḂḂ ḂḂ : What he wished most to  
ḂḂḂḂḂḂḂ ḂḂ ḂḂḂḂḂḂ see was the banishment  
ḂḂ ḂḂḂ Ṯ' Ḃ ḂḂḂḂ ḂḂ of the whole of the  
ḂḂḂḂ. English from Ireland.

ḂḂ Ḃ ḂḂ ṮḂ ḂḂḂ ḂḂḂ ḂḂḂ What brought me to talk  
ḂḂḂ ḂḂḂ ḂḂ ḂḂ ḂḂ with you now is the fact  
ḂḂḂ ḂḂḂḂḂḂḂ. that I am in difficulty.

ḂḂ Ḃ ḂḂ ṮḂ ḂḂḂ (ḂḂḂ) What the man did was to  
ḂḂḂḂ ḂḂḂḂḂḂḂḂ. throw at them.

ἵρ ἐ μὴ το ὄειν Σέμαρ ἀνῆραιν ἡᾶ ἰ ὕπονναὸ αἶρ.	What James did then was to make him a present of it.
ἵρ ἐ μὴ ἀοειρεαὸ ζαὸ εἰννε ἡᾶ ζυρ ἡαῖτ αἶρ.	What everyone used to say was that it was a great blessing for him.

### ΜΟΡ.

ἵρ μόρ τε ἡᾶὸ ἐ.	It is <i>important</i> .
ἵρ μόρ τε μαοῖρεαῖν ἐ.	It is a thing to be proud of, or boast about.
ἡῖορ ἡόρ τε ἡᾶὸ ἐ.	It was not of much importance.
ἡῖ μόρ ὅομ ἡἰἡεαὸ.	I <i>must</i> return.
ἡῖ μόρ ὅομ ζῆμαρεαὸτ.	I must take my departure.
ἡῖ μόρ ἡἡν οὐῖτ.	We have no objection to your doing so.
ἡῖ μόρ ἡἡομ ὅὸ ἐ.	I don't <i>grudge</i> it to him.
ἡῖ μόρ ἡᾶ (ἡᾶ ζο) ὕῖν ῖε ὀεαῖτα.	It is <i>almost</i> done.
ἡῖ μόρ ἡᾶ ζο ἡβειὸ ῖε εῖῖοὸνῖε.	It will be nearly finished.
Ῥᾶ μόρ ὅομ, &c. ?	<i>Why shouldn't I, &amp;c. ?</i> lit., how is it too much for me ?
ἡᾶ μόρ ᾶ ὀ' εῖῖε τῦ !	How grand you have got !
ἡῖ ἡόρε (ἡό + ὀε) ζο ῖᾶζαὸ.	It is not <i>likely</i> that I shall go.

## beas.

1r beas liom é.	I <i>consider</i> it too small.
1r beas orm é.	I don't like it at all.
1r beas agam é.	I have no great opinion of him.
1r beas an rgeál é.	It's no great harm. He is not to be pitied.
1r beas an cábaip tú.	You are not of much use.
1r beas dá fíóir agat.	'Tis little you know.
1r beas naé mícío do beic ag imcheacht.	It is <i>nearly time</i> for him to be going.
ba beas náir mícío do beic ag imcheacht.	It was nearly time for him to be going.
1r beas a bpríjs é.	It is a trifle.
1r beas má tá éinne i n-Éirínn o' féadfaid é óéanam.	<i>There is hardly</i> a person in Ireland who could do it.

## Miscellaneous.

An éireodaid (ré) uinn?	Shall we <i>succeed</i> ?
Bí ré ag éirge fuair.	It was <i>getting</i> cold.
Maic an áit go maibair!	Well said! or Well done!
Maic mar tárla.	It has happened luckily.
Níor labair pé fiú don focal amháin.	He did not speak a <i>single</i> word.
San fiú na h-anála do carrpaing (carrac).	Without <i>even</i> taking breath.
Fiú ár ndaoine féin.	<i>Even</i> our own people.

Τά ρέ ας ουτ ι βρεαβαρ.	He is <i>getting better</i> .
Τά ρέ ας ουτ ι η-ολεαρ.	He is <i>getting worse</i> .
Αβαηρ έ !	Hear ! hear ! Bravo !
Νί κυμιν τιον α λειτέρο.	I don't remember <i>the like of it</i> .
Ό έάρτα αν λεαβαρ αςαη ανοηρ.	As I <i>happen to have the</i> book now.
Τα ρέ γεαλλε βειτ φολλαη } Τά ρέ φολλαη ηαε μοηρ. }	It is <i>almost empty</i> .
Νί φυη ουτ υαιό αςατ.	You cannot <i>avoid it</i> .
Τά αν πεαρ ραν ας ουτ ι ηβεο οηη.	That man's conduct <i>cuts</i> <i>me to the quick</i> .
Τά ρέ ι ηιοετ βάηρ. } Τά ρέ λε η-υετ βάηρ. }	He is at <i>the point of death</i> .
Ιρ μιητε(αε) αν ρεαη έ.	It is a terrible affair.
Ιρ εαητε αν λά έ λε φυεε.	It is a terribly wet day.
Σεαη γαν οαε.	A very <i>unlikely</i> story.
Λεις (λεος) οοη πεηη ηεο' εηηο εαηηε.	Don't annoy me with your talk.
Εαο έ αν εηηο ατα αςαηρα οε ?	What right (call) have you to it ?
Αη εηηο ιρ λυγα οε οά υαιη ρα ηβλιαοαη.	At least <i>twice a year</i> .
Εοηη ηα η-εαζεοόρα.	The <i>essence</i> of wrong.
Λε εοηη οίοηηαοιηη.	Through <i>downright</i> laziness.
Τά ρηυη οε'η εεαηη αηε.	He is <i>partly</i> right.
Ιρ λεαη αν γηό οηηε έ.	'Tis an <i>absurd thing</i> for you to do.

Cao 'na taob ná ceann-  
nuigeann tú bróga dúit  
féin? San an t-airgead  
do beir agam.

Tá pé ar nór cuma liom.  
Cé tá ar ár dtí?  
Tá pé ar do tí.

Daoine náic mé.  
Bí ceo raor aige ar dul.  
Is duat átar dó.  
Bí mo turar i n-airdear.  
Cá leigeann tú a leap.  
Sogailte só.

Beiré ran 'na marla 7 'na  
súit ar a sclú an dá lá  
'r an fáir a beiré srian  
ra rpeir.

Tá pé beagán fuar.  
Tá pé roinnt boðar.  
Tá pé san beiré ar fógnam,  
Ní fuil an t-uball ro  
aibí 1 sceart.

Ní cúrraíde gáiríde é.  
Do gáirpá, mura mbeaó  
nác cúir gáiríde é.

Why don't you buy boots  
for yourself? *Because*  
I have not the money.

He is *indifferent*.  
Who is *intending* us harm?  
He is bent on attacking  
you. He intends to  
harm you.

Others *besides* myself.  
He had *permission* to go.  
He has it from his father.  
My journey was *in vain*.  
You need not.  
A fool's errand; a wild  
goose chase.

That will be a reproach  
and a blot on their  
fame the *longest day* the  
sun will be in the sky.

It is a little cold.  
He is *somewhat* deaf.  
He is a *little unwell*.  
This apple is not *quite*  
ripe.

It is nothing to laugh at.  
You would laugh only  
that it is not a matter  
to laugh at.

Ní cúrraíodé cainte é.	It is nothing to talk about.
Tarraingis éúgac ruo éisint eile mar cúrraíodé magaíó.	Find something else to make fun about.
Cao é an gnó atá agat de?	What do you want it for?
Uo baineadó iarraéct de séit ar.	He was <i>slightly</i> startled.
Ní fuil don gar ag úrém leir an mballa.	There's no use trying to get up on the wall.
Ní raib don mairtear 'na glór.	<i>In vain</i> did he cry (talk, speak).
Ní móíodé sup rshíob ré an liciú.	<i>Perhaps</i> he did <i>not</i> write the letter.
Shabaim lem' air rin to dénaim.	I <i>propose</i> to do that.
Tábuiroedáragam ort (fé.)	I am <i>thankful</i> to you ( <i>for</i> ).
Táim buíroedó óíot (fé.)	
Beirim buíroedárag tuít mar sheall (síoll) air.	I <i>thank</i> you <i>for</i> it.
Shabaim buíroedárag leat mar sheall air.	
Beiró tú déanac (déróed- nac) ag an traen.	You will be late <i>for</i> the train.
Beiró tú déanac ar rshoil.	You will be late <i>for</i> school.
Bí curó aca shá ráó go raib beirte (bercta) ar an mbeirteamnac.	Some of them were saying that the rascal was caught.
Éireodáiró a éíoróed ar úiarmuio.	It will <i>break</i> Dermot's heart.



Ḥḡairc riad ar ḡairiōib.  
munab ort atá an éaint !

They burst out *laughing*.  
What talk you have ! If  
it isn't you have the  
talk.

Luig an éaint go léir ar  
an macalongs a bí  
iméigste ar ḡaōb.

The whole conversation  
*turned* on the misfor-  
tune which *had befallen*  
Sive.

níor iméig ortá déct an  
puo a bí tuillte aca.

They only got what they  
*had deserved*.

Ṫeir orainn teáct ruar  
leo.

We failed to overtake  
them.

Ṫá pé aḡ vóanam aicéir  
ar a éaint.

He is *mimicking* his man-  
ner of talking.

Ṫá pé ar an bpear ip  
raibéir na muman.

He is *the richest man* in  
Munster.

Ip vóca gur vóic leo.

Probably they *imagine*.

Ṫá pé buailte irteac im  
aighe.

I am *firmly convinced*.

Loirgead iad 'na mbeataib.

They were burnt *alive*.

Caō avéanraō cor ar bit  
aighe ?

What will I do at all *with*  
*him* ?

Bí breir mór 7 a ḡceart  
aca dá faḡáil.

They were getting a great  
deal *more than* their  
right.

Bí coróin pé'n bpúnt aca  
dá faḡáil.

They were getting five  
shillings *in the pound*.

Bí ḡac uile óuine aḡ  
vóanam truaig (truaḡa)

Everyone was *sympathis-*  
*ing* with her.

Comnaoir do Sheagán an té ba fine aca.	The eldest of them was the same age as John.
Ba dóic leat air sup leir an áit.	You (one) <i>would imagine</i> <i>by him</i> that he owned the place.
Ní raib a tuairis ann.	There wasn't a trace of him there.
Com mairt agus dá mba ná raib éasóir ar bit ann.	<i>Just as if</i> it were <b>not</b> wrong.
O'fíapruis pé cao pé nóear an ruit.	He asked <i>what was the</i> <i>cause</i> of the merriment.
Cé'r a mac tú?	Whose son are you?
Ní mairfeair puinn ruit.	You will meet <i>your match</i> .
Ca b'fíor ruit?	How did you know?
A rgeal péin rgeal sac éinne.	Everyone is most inter- ested in his own affairs.
Turá pé nóear poin.	<i>You are the cause</i> of that.
Tá gnó nac é agam.	I have a <i>different matter</i> to look after.
Ní tairé dom péin.	I am <i>no exception</i> ; i.e., I am the same as the others.

### The Autonomous Form of the Irish Verb.

It is sometimes necessary or convenient to express an action without mentioning the subject, either because the latter is too general or not of sufficient importance to be mentioned, or because there is some other reason for suppressing it. Most languages have felt this necessity, and various means have been adopted to supply it. The use of the passive voice, or of reflexive verbs, or of circumlocations, is the method generally adopted in other languages. In Irish there is a special form of the verb for this purpose. As it has no subject expressed it is sometimes called the **Indefinite** form of the verb: as it forms a complete sentence in itself it is also called the **Autonomous** or **Independent** form.

An English verb cannot stand without its subject. For example, "walks," "walked," etc., express nothing. The English verbs cannot alone make complete sense. The Autonomous form of Irish verbs can stand alone. The word "Buailtear" is a complete sentence. It means that "*the action of striking takes place.*" The Autonomous form stands without a subject; in fact it cannot be united to a subject, because the moment we express a subject the ordinary 3rd person singular form of the particular tense and mood must be substituted. Buailtear an bopó. *Someone (they, people, we, etc.) strikes the table;* but buailteann an fear (fé, ríad, na daoine, etc.) an bopó.

We shall take the sentence: Buailtear an gádh ar le cloic ó lámh éaróg. The word "buailtear" of itself conveys a complete statement, viz., that *the action of*

*striking takes place.* The information given by the single word “*βυαίτεαρ*” is restricted to the action. There are circumstances surrounding that action of which we may wish to give information; *e.g.* “What is the object of the action?” “*ἄν ᾤσῳαρ*.” “What is the instrument used?” “*ἔε κτοίε*.” “Where did the stone come from?” “*ὅ ἑλῖν ἑλῖν*.” We may thus fill in any number of circumstances we please, and fit them in their places by means of the proper prepositions, but these circumstances do not change the nature of the fundamental word “*βυαίτεαρ*.”

It may be objected that the word “*βυαίτεαρ*” in the last sentence is passive voice, present tense, and means “*is struck*,” and that “*ἄν ᾤσῳαρ*” is the subject of the verb. Granted for a moment that it is passive voice. Now since “*βυαίτεαν τῷνε εἰς ἑ*,” *somebody strikes him*, is active voice, as all admit, and by supposition “*βυαίτεαρ ἑ*,” *somebody strikes him*, or, *he is struck*, is passive, then comes the difficulty, what voice is “*ἑλῖν βυαίτε*,” *somebody is struck*? Surely it is the passive of “*βυαίτεαρ*”; and if so “*βυαίτεαρ*” itself cannot be passive, though it may be rendered by a passive in English. If we are to be guided merely by the English equivalent, then “*βυαίτεαν*” in the above phrase is as much a passive voice as “*βυαίτεαρ*,” because it can be correctly translated into English by a passive verb: *viz.*, *He is struck*.

When we come to consider this form in intransitive verbs, our position becomes much stronger in favour of the Autonomous verb. Let us consider the following sentence: *Συβαίταρ ἄν ἄν μῶταρ νυαίρ ὅιονν*





*Somebody is coming.* Beirōpar as riubal, *Somebody will be walking.* Nuair moctuis an t-atac so riabtar as ceangait a cor, *When the giant perceived that they were binding his legs.*

The Irish Autonomous form cannot be literally translated into English, because no exact counterpart exists in English, hence the usual method of translating this form is to use the English passive voice, but the Irish verb is not therefore passive. To give an instance of the incapability of the English language to express *literally* the force of the Autonomous verb, notice the English translation of the subjoined example of the continued use of the Autonomous verb in an Irish sentence.

“Áit ana-aepeac ir ead an áit rin : nuair bítear as gabáil an tpeo rain i n-am maiub na h-oirche, ariustear coiríoeacat d’a déanamh 7 foctiom mar beiríoe as iut 7 foctiom eile mar beiríoe as teiríoe, 7 annrain ariustear foctiom mar tiocfaiíoe ruar 7 mar buairíoe 7 mar beiríoe faoi bualaí 7 mar buriíoe, 7 annrain ariustear mar bead deap-ruactar 7 cóir.”

This passage cannot be literally translated: the following will give a fair idea of its meaning: “That place is frequented by fairies: when one is walking near it in the dead stillness of the night, footsteps are heard and loud noises, as if people were running and fleeing, and then other noises are heard as if people were overtaking (those who were running away), and were striking and being struck, and as if they were being broken in pieces, and then are heard noises as if they were in hot rout and pursuit.”

The Autonomous form of the verb has a passive voice of its own formed by the addition of the verbal adjective (or past participle) of the verb to the Autonomous forms of the verb *to be* ; e.g.,  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\pi\ \beta\upsilon\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon$ , etc.

This form of the Irish verb has a full conjugation through all the moods and tenses, active and passive voices ; but has only one form for each tense. All verbs in Irish, with the single exception of the assertive verb  $\text{ír}$ , have this form of conjugation.  $\text{ír}$  can have no Autonomous form, because  $\text{ír}$  has no meaning by itself. It is as meaningless as the sign of equality (=) until the terms are placed one on each side of it.

To sum up then, the Irish Autonomous form is not passive, for—

(1) All verbs (except  $\text{ír}$ ), transitive and intransitive, even the verb  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ , have this form of conjugation.

(2) This form has a complete passive voice of its own

(3) The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are always used with it ; e.g.,  $\beta\upsilon\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon\alpha\pi\ \acute{\epsilon}$ .

(4) Very frequently when a personal pronoun is the object of the Autonomous form of the verb, it is placed last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs, thus giving a very close analogy with the construction of the active verb, already explained in par. 535.  $\text{Ní\oí\ cian\ t\acute{a}\mu\dots\text{gus\ p\acute{e}\o\lambda\acute{o}\ \text{ír}\text{t\acute{e}\acute{a}\acute{c}\ \text{p}\acute{a}\text{n}\ \text{g}\text{coill}\ \text{p}\text{eo}\ \text{m}\acute{\epsilon}\dots}$  *It was not long until I was driven into this wood.*  $\text{\O o\ l\acute{e}\text{g}\acute{e}\alpha\pi\acute{o}\ \acute{o}\ \text{n}\text{-}\acute{\alpha}\ \text{g}\text{c}\text{r}\acute{\epsilon}\acute{\alpha}\text{c}\text{t}\acute{\alpha}\text{i}\text{b}\ \text{i}\acute{\alpha}\text{o}.$  *They were healed of their wounds.*

(5) Lastly, and the strongest point of all, in the



minds of *native* Irish speakers, without exception, the word *buaitear* in such sentences as "*buaitear an gaoth*" is *active*, and *gaoth* is its object. Surely those Irish speakers are the best judges of the true shape of their own thoughts.

We will now give a synopsis of the various forms of the Autonomous verb, beginning with the verb *τά*.

### The Verb *τά*.

τὰταρ.*	Someone, we, they, people, etc.	is, are.
ní fuittear.†		is not, are not.
bítear (bítear).		does be, do be.
ní bítear.		does not be, do not be.
bítear (bítear).		was, were.
ní raibítear.		was not, were not.
bítí.		used to be.
beirar, beirtear, beir-		will be.
tear, béirtear.		
beirí(òe), beirí(òe)		would be.
béirí.		
bítear (Let).		be.
má tátar (If).		is, are.
má bítear (If).		does be, do be.
etc.		
oá mbeirí (If).		were, would be.
go raibítear! (May).		be ( <i>for once</i> ).
go mbítear! (May).	be ( <i>generally</i> ).	
Oeium go bfuiltear, I say that someone, etc., is.		
Oeium ná fuittear,	„ „ „ is not.	

\* *τάταρ* or *τάτα'p*.

† *fuittear*, *fuittea'p*.

## An Intransitive Verb.

Siubaltar.	Someone, we, they, people, etc.	walks, walk.
táatar ag siubal.		is (are) walking.
bítear ag siubal.		does (do) be walking.
siublað.		walked.
bítear ag siubal.		was (were) walking.
siubaltaoi.		used to walk.
bítí ag siubal.		used to be walking.
siubaltar.		will walk.
beifar ag siubal.		will be walking.
siubaltaoi.		would walk.
beifí ag siubal.		would be walking.
siubaltar (Let).		walk.
bítear ag siubal (Let).		be walking.
má siubaltar (If).		is (are) walking.
etc.		
oá siubaltaoi (If).		would be walking.
oá mbeifí ag siubal (If)		were walking.

## A Transitive Verb.

A noun is placed after the active forms in order to show the cases.

Bualtear an clár.	Someone strikes the table.
Táatar ag bualað an cláir.	Someone is striking the table.
Tá an clár oá (gá) bualað.	The table is being struck.
Táatar buailte.	Someone is struck.
Táatar pé bualað,	Someone is being struck.
Bítear ag bualað an cláir.	Someone usually strikes the table.
Oo buaileað an clár.	Someone struck the table.

Bíteap ag bualað an cláir. Someone was striking the table.

Ói an cláir oá (gá) bualað. The table was being struck.

Bíteap buailte. Someone was struck.

Bíteap fé bualað. Someone was being struck.

Buailtí an cláir. Someone used to strike the table.

Bítí ag bualað an cláir. Someone used to be striking the table.

Bítí buailte. Someone used to be struck.

Buailfap (buailfeap) an cláir. Someone will strike the table.

Beifap ag bualað an cláir. Someone will be striking the table.

Beifap buailte. Someone will be struck.

Buailpí (buailpröe) an cláir. Someone would strike the table.

Beipí ag bualað an cláir. Someone would be striking the table.

Beipí buailte. Someone would be struck.

Buailteap an cláir. Let someone strike the table.

Bíteap ag bualað an cláir. Let someone be striking the table.

Má buailteap an cláir. If someone strikes the table.

Má bíteap ag bualað an cláir. If someone does be striking the table.

etc.

Oá mbuailpí an cláir. If someone were to strike the table.

Óá mbeifí ag bualaó an If someone were to be  
 ctáir. striking the table.

Before leaving this important subject it may not be uninteresting to see what some Irish grammarians have thought of the Autonomous form.

O'Donovan in his Irish Grammar (p. 183) wrote as follows :—

“The passive voice has no synthetic form to denote persons or numbers ; the personal pronouns, therefore, must be always expressed, and placed after the verb ; and, by a strange peculiarity of the language, they are always ‘*in the accusative form.*’

“For this reason some Irish scholars have considered the passive Irish verb to be a **form of the active verb, expressing the action in an indefinite manner** ; as, buailtear mé, *i.e., some person or persons, thing or things, strikes or strike me* ; buailteó é, *some person or thing (not specified) struck him*. But it is more convenient in a practical grammar to call this form by the name **passive**, as in other languages, and to assume that tú, é, í, and iao, which follow it, are ancient forms of the nominative case.”

Molloy says in his Grammar, page 62 :—

“Verbs have a third form which may be properly called deponent ; as buailtear mé, *I am (usually) beaten* ; buailtear ú, *thou art (usually) beaten* ; buailtear é, *he is (usually) beaten*. The agent of this form of the verb is never known ; but although verbs of this form always govern the objective case, like active verbs, still they must be rendered in English

by the passive ; as, *buaiteadh iad*, *they were beaten*. Here *iad* is quite passive to the action ; for it suffers the action which is performed by some unknown agent."

Again at page 99, he says :—

"But there is another form of the verb **which always governs an objective case** ; and although it must be translated into the passive voice in English, still it is a deponent, and **not a passive, form in Irish** ; as, *buaitear mé*, etc. The grammarians who maintain that this form of the verb takes a nominative case clearly show that they did not speak the language ; for no Irish-speaking person would say *buaitear pé, rí, ríad*. It is equally ridiculous to say that *é, í, iad*, are nominatives in Irish, although they be found so in Scotch Gaelic."

Further on, at page 143, he states again that "*deponent verbs govern an objective case.*"

Thus we plainly see that O'Donovan and Molloy bear out the fact that the noun or pronoun after the Autonomous form of the verb is in the **accusative case**, though the former says it is more convenient to assume *that it is in the nominative case !*

# APPENDICES.

## Appendix I.

### NOUNS OF THE FIRST DECLENSION.

adrián, a song.	caribao, chariot.
adartar, a halter.	carin, heap.
ádótar, a cause.	carán, path.
admao, wood.	carúir, hammer.
amadán, a fool.	cat, cat.
amairic, a sight.	ceann, head or end.
amhar, doubt.	ceol, music; pl. ceolta.
doiðnear, delight.	ceutlongao, † breakfast.
aoiteac, manure.	cineát, kind or sort.
aol, lime.	cleamhar, marriage alliance.
aián, bread.	cléiriac, clerk.
amóán, hillock.	clog, bell, clock.
arm, an army: pl. arm, arma.	coşao, war; pl. coşta or coşaoe.
ac, swelling or tumour.	copán, cup.
ácar, gladness.	cieream, faith, religion.
	cuan, bay or haven; pl. cuanta.
	cudair, foam.
	cúl, back of the head.
báo, boat.	oat, beetle.
balbán, dummy. (stammerer).	oeriac, end.
báir, top.	oiaðat, devil.
bár, death.	oinneir, dinner.
beagán, a little.	oócar, harm.
biao, food; gen. bíó.	oioeall, grudge, reserve.
biorán, a pin.	oíman, earth, world.
biteamnac, rascal.	oonar, misfortune.
blar, taste.	oimar, door; pl. oimra.
bonn, sole, foundation.	ouao, difficulty.
bócar, road; nom. pl. bóirne.	oúccar, inherited instinct.
bmasán, a salmon.	
brióo, joy, pride.	earbail, a tail.
briomac, foal or colt.	earriac, Spring.
brión, sorrow.	eróean, ivy.
briuaç, brink; pl. briuaça.	eotar, knowledge.
buróeacar, thanks.	euroac, cloth, clothes.
bun, bottom.	
caipeal, * a stone fortress.	
calaó, harbour.	

\* This word also means a child's spinning "top."

† In spoken language briecfearta, m., is used for "breakfast."



φαῖσαο, } shelter.  
 πορῖσαο, }  
 ριαῖ, raven; pl. ρείε or ρείζ.  
 ροκατ, a word; pl. ροκαῖτ or  
 ροκτα.  
 ροῖμαρ, Autumn.  
 ρονν, tune or air.

σαῖαρ, goat.  
 σαῖαρ, beagle.  
 ζαννοατ, gauder.  
 ζαρρύν, a young boy.  
 ζεαῖμαρ, green corn.  
 ζεάμικαῖ, young bird.  
 ζλαρ, lock.  
 ζλόμ, voice.  
 ζοβ, beak (of a bird).  
 ζρεανν, humour.  
 ζυατ, coal.

ιαμινν, iron.  
 (ρ)ιολαρ, eagle.  
 ιοναο, place.  
 ιρτεάν, hollow.

λαοῖ, calf.  
 λάμ, middle.  
 λεαῖαρ, a book; pl. λεαῖαιμ,  
 λεαῖμα.  
 λεαῖμάν, booklet.  
 λεαῖαρ, leather.  
 λευν, misfortune.  
 λιον, a net; pl. λιοντα.  
 λόν, provision.  
 λομζ, a track.

μαοαῖ or μαομα, a dog; pl.  
 μαομαῖοε.  
 μαζαῖ, mockery, ridicule.  
 μαομ, a steward.  
 μαμτ, steer or beeve.  
 μεαῖ, failure.  
 μιττεάν, blame.  
 μιοννάν, kid.  
 μόμιν, much, many.

मुल्लिाῖ, top; pl. मुल्लिाῖगे.

नाοम, a saint.  
 नेअम, strength.  
 ओमम, hunger.  
 ओम, gold.

पडिाῖ, a pagan.  
 पापेउम, paper.  
 पिोबान, windpipe or neck.  
 पोम, tune or air.  
 प्रेउकान, crow.

पम, track; gen. पमिन.  
 पोव, road.  
 पून, secret.

णाक, a sack.  
 णाडाम, a priest.  
 णाडार, kind or sort.  
 णातान्न, salt.  
 णामिमाῖ, summer.  
 णाओड, life, world.  
 णाओम, craftsman, artisan.  
 णाओडार, exertion, work.  
 णेाड, hawk.  
 रेओ, a precious thing, jewel;  
 pl. रेओा.  
 रगेउत, news; pl. रगेउता;  
 रगेउता, stories.  
 रलाडमाῖ, chain; pl. रलाडमाῖओे.  
 रोप, wisp.  
 रोर, } kind or sort  
 रोर, }  
 र्प्रिओमाओ, a spirit.  
 र्प्रोम, a spur.  
 र्प्रोर, sport.  
 र्प्रोर, treasure store.  
 रुामिनेअर, repose.

तामातल, a short space of time.  
 ताओरेाῖ, a captain, a leader.  
 तेातलाῖ, hearth.  
 त्प्रिओडान, furniture.  
 तुम, beginning.





NOM.	GEN.	MEANING.
oabac	oaiðce	a vat
oealb	veilbe	a form
oealg	oeilge	a thorn
oeoc	oige	a drink
oion	oine	protection
oimeann	oiminne	bad weather
oieac	oieice	face, visage
earós	earóige	a weasel
feact	feicte	time, occasion
fealg	feirge	anger
feurós	feuróige	beard
fiðeall	fiðille	chess
pleaó	pleróe	a feast
plealg	pleirge	wreath
rneum	rneime	a root
fuinneog	fuinneoige	window
fuinnreo5	fuinnreoige	an ash
fuireog	fuireoige	a lark
gabló5	gablóige	a little fork
gaoc	gaoithe	wind
gealac	gealaige	moon
geug	géirge	branch
giog	gíge	squeak
geirpreac	geirpige }	girl
gioprac	giopraige }	
glún	glúine	knee
gnan	gnéine	sun
gnua5	gnuaige	hair
iall	éille	thong
ingean	ingine	daughter
lám	láime	hand
lapós	lapóige	match (light)
laðac	laicce, laðai5e	mud, mire
leac	leice	a stone flag
leac	leicte	half, side
long	luinge	ship
lúb	lúibe	loop
luc	luice	mouse
meup	méipe	finger
muc	muice	pig
neam	neime	heaven

NOM.	GEN.	MEANING.
óinreac	óinrize	fool (f.)
oimóðs	oimóðze	thumb
piart	péirte	reptile
piartóðs	piartóize	worm
piob	píbe	musical pipe
pluc	pluice	cheek
póðs	póize	kiss
riar	riéire	order, regulation
ráil	ráile	heel
realtg	reilze	hunt
rearc	reirce	love
reirreac	reirrize	plough
rgeac	rgeice	hawthorn bush
rđian	rđine	knife
rđiam	rđéime	comeliness
rđiaé	rđéite	shield
rđóinaé	rđóinaize	throat
rđriob	rđribe	scrape
rión	riue	weather
rlac	rlaite	rod
roineann	roinne	fine weather
rpeal	rpeile	scythe
rplanc	rplance	spark, thunderbolt.
rión	rióine	nose
taob	taoibe	side
teuo	téroe	string
tonn	tuinne	wave
treab	treibe	tribe
uð	uibe	an egg

### Appendix III.

#### NOUNS BELONGING TO THE THIRD DECLENSION.

- (a) All personal nouns ending in óir, úir,  
 (b) All abstract nouns ending in áct.  
 (c) Verbal nouns in áct, áil, and áma'n.  
 (d) The following list:—

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING
áct	áctá	decre:
áiríu	áiríu	name

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
αιρίος	αιρίστε, αιρεαστα	repayment, restitution
αλτόρι	αλτόρια	altar
ανάλ	ανάλα	breath
αναν	αννα	soul
δοῦ	δοῦα	Hugh
δορ	δορα	folk, people
άτ	άτα	ford
beannaδτ	beannaδτα	blessing
bain-πίοζαν	bain-πίοζνα	queen
bioρι	beαρι	a (cooking) spit
biē (bioē)	beατα	life
bláτ	bláτα	blossom
bliaṓain	bliaṓna	a year
blíoετ	bleαετα	butter-milk
boē	boēta	tent, cot
briuz	brioζa	palace, mansion
buaēalll	buaēalla	boy
buaio	buaioa	victory
buaioριτ	buaioεαριτα	trouble.
caḃair	caḃria caḃriaē	help
cáin	cána	tax
Cáirz	Cáirza	Easter
caē	caēta	battle
cion	ceana	love, desire, affection
cior	ciora	rent
ciē, m. (cioē)	ceαta	shower
cleap	cleapa	a trick
cliaimain, m.	cliaimna	son-in-law
cnám	cnáma	bone
coṓlaō	coṓaεta	sleep
cóρι	cória	justice
connriaō	connriaεta	compact, covenant
cornaḃ	coranta	defence
críaō	críaōa	torture, destruction
crior	crieapa	belt
criuē	crioēta	form
cuairet	cuaireta (or cuairite)	visit
curo	cōa	part, share
oáil	oála	account, meeting
oán	oána	destiny
oac	oαta	colour
oeanam	oeanma	make or shape
oiammuo	oiammuoα	Dermot
oocṓri	oocṓria	doctor
oṓuēc	oṓuēta	dew
oṓum, m.	oṓoma	a back

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
éaric	éarica	tax, tribute
euo	euroa	jealousy
euloó	euloóa	escape, elopement
pát	páta	cause, reason
pearc	pearca	a grave, tomb
pearcainn	pearcainna	rain
peiróm	peiróma	service, use
peoil	peola	flesh, meat
piacail	piacaila	a tooth
píon	píona	wine
píor	pearpa	knowledge
plait	pláta	prince
poš	poša	a sudden attack
pošluim	pošlumta	learning
róšnaó	róšaríta	{ decree
ruašnaó	ruašaríta	
ruaóct, m.	ruaócta	{ announcement
ruaršlaó	ruaršluigíte	cold
ruaó	ruaóta	ransom, redemption
ruil	ruila	hatred
		blood
šleann	šleanna	valley
šníom	šníoma	act, deed
šoin	šona	wound
šráó	šráóda	love
šreim, m.	šreama	a piece
šrut	šrocta	curds
šul	šola	weeping
šut	šocta	a voice
šaršaró	šaršaróda	a desire, request
šat	šata	land, country
šomáin	šomána	hurling (a game)
šomšaró	šomšarócte	report, notice
šeabó, f.	šeabta	a bed
šeáóct	šeáócta	a grave
šionn	šeanna	beer, ale
šior	šearpa	a fort
šó	šóda	lake
šóct	šócta	reproach
šup	šopa	an herb
maóim	maóma	defeat, rout
maíteam	maíte	forgiveness
meap	meapa	esteem

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
mian	miana	desire
mil	meala	honey
moð	moða	manner
móin	móna	bog
muiꝝ	maꝝa	sea
óꝑ	óꝑa	a young person
olann	olna	wool
ollaṁaṁ	ollaṁna	instruction
onóꝝ	onóꝝa	honour
opꝑlað	opꝑaṁlce	admission, opening
ꝛaṁ	ꝛaṁa	luck
ꝛeaṁt, m.	ꝛeaṁta	law
ꝛioṁt	ꝛeaṁta	a form
ꝛuṁ	ꝛeaṁta	running
ꝛaṁaṁl	ꝛaṁla	an equal, like
ꝛaṁaṁn	ꝛaṁna	November
ꝛꝑaṁ	ꝛꝑaṁa	shadow
ꝛeoṁ	ꝛeoṁa	flower
ꝛeaṁ	ꝛeaṁa	a space of time
ꝛioṁ	ꝛeaṁa	frost
ꝛioṁṁaṁ	ꝛioṁṁaṁa	peace
ꝛioṁt	ꝛleaṁta	posterity
ꝛmaṁt, m.	ꝛmaṁta	a curb
ꝛnaṁ	ꝛnaṁa	a swim
ꝛoꝑ	ꝛoꝑa	pleasure
ꝛꝛaṁ	ꝛꝛaṁa	a layer
ꝛꝛioṁ	ꝛꝛioṁa	nose
ꝛꝛuṁ	ꝛꝛoṁa	stream
ṁaṁlṁlṁꝛ	ṁaṁlṁlṁa	tailor
ṁaṁ	ṁaṁa	a drove
ṁioṁꝛꝑaṁ	ṁioṁꝛꝑaṁa	purpose, project
ṁoṁ	ṁoṁa	a will
ṁꝛaṁꝑ	ṁꝛaṁꝑa	a strand
ṁꝛéaṁ	ṁꝛéaṁa	flock, drove
ṁꝛeoṁꝛ	ṁꝛeoṁa	guide, troop
ṁꝛeuꝛ	ṁꝛeuꝛa	battle
ṁꝛioṁ	ṁꝛioṁa	fight, quarrel
ṁuaṁ	ṁuaṁa	Tuam
ṁuaṁ	ṁuaṁa	tribe
uaṁṁ	uaṁṁa	cave
uṁt	oṁta	breast

## Appendix IV.

## THE NOUNS OF THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

The letters in brackets give the termination of the genitive singular.

adb or adba, gen. adbann, a river;

pl. aibne or aibneacha.

adonta(-ò), license, permission.

Anna(-n), Isle of Arran; pl. Ainne,  
The Arran Isles.

anna(-n), kidney.

beoin (beoinac), beer.

brága(-o), m., the upper part of  
the breast.

brieteam(-an), m., a judge.

briót(-n), a quern, handmill; pl.  
brióinte.

caoma(-c), a sheep; pl. caoini.

carra(-o), a friend; pl. cáirí.

catair(-eiac), a city, fortress.

caithoir(-reac), a chair.

ceairroca(-n), a forge, smithy.

ceathranna(-n), a quarter.

clair(-rac), a furrow.

cóirí(-rreac), a feast.

comurra(-n), neighbour; pl.  
comurraim.

comla(-c), a gate, door.

comra(-n), a coffer, cupboard,  
coffin.

comóin(-nac), a crown.

cmáin(-nac), a sow.

cú, gen. con, a hound; pl.  
coin, cona, hounds.

cúil(-ac), a corner.

cuirle(-ann), a pulse, vein.

oíleam(-an), a cup-bearer.

oair(-ac), an oak.

oáin(-n), palm of the hand.

oile(-ann), flood, deluge; pl.

oileanna, oileanna.

ealaí(-n), science, learning.

earadonta(-ò), disagreement, dis-  
obedience.

earcú (compound of cú), an eel.

eirí(-rreac), an oyster.

eoáir (eoárac), a key.

eoínn(-n) [or gen. same as nom.],  
barley.

feairam(-an), m., philosopher

feiceam(-an), m., debtor.

feoir(-ac), The Nore.

fozáir(-ac), a sign, mark.

foce(-ao), twenty.

fozáil(-glac), plunder.

gaí(-n), m., a smith; pl. gaibne

gaíin (gaíinac), hatred.

gaíla(-n), a shoulder; pl.

gaíine, gaíilleacha.

ionga(-n), a nail (of the finger);  
pl. ingne.

laí(-n), a duck.

laí (láiac), a mare.

lánam(-n), a married couple.

laíair (laíiac), a flame.

látair (látiac), a level plain.

leaca(-n), m., a cheek; pl.  
leacaineacha.

luirga(-n), the shin; pl. luirgne.

maimirtí(-rreac), a monastery.

meanma(-n), the mind.

míle(-ao), a soldier, warrior.

náim(-o), an enemy; pl. náimí.

noílaí (noílaí), Christmas.

oíam(-an), a doctor, professor.

peairra(-n), a person.

ruaíair (ruaíiac), a rule.

ruaí(-n), a choice; pl. ruaíina,

ruaíineacha.

raí (raíac), a beam.

reang(-n), a cormorant.

raí (raíac), a stallion.

taí(-ac), a wedge.

talam, gen. talman, land.

teairair (teairiac) Tara.

teang(-n or ó), tongue; pl.

teangta.

teoir(-n), boundary, limit.

uile(-ann), an elbow.

ulá(-n), a beard.

uirra(-n), a door-jamb.



## Appendix V

## A LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBAL NOUNS.

VERB	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN
abair aomúig	say confess	ráo aomáil
bain beir bliḡ bhuic buain	snatch, take* bear, carry milk cook reap,	baint bheit bliḡian bhuic buaint
cail cailt ceannuig ceit céim cinn claoir coimeir	lose throw, open, consume buy conceal step determine defeat watch, guard	cailleamain cailteam, cailteao ceannaic ceit céim cinneamain claoi coimeir
coirp coirḡ comraic coḡair conḡair coirpuiḡ copair creir cuir	bless prevent fight whisper keep stir, move defend believe put, send	{coirpneas {coirpneasao coirḡ comraic coḡair conḡair coirpuiḡ copair creir cuir
deairm oíol onuir oúirḡ	forget sell shut (M. move towards) awake	deairm oíol onuir oúirneac, oúirneao
éas éilḡ éirḡ éirte	die claim rise, arise listen	éas éileam, éilneasao éirne éirteac
fas fás fan	find, get leave wait	fasáil fásáil fanamain

\* To take a thing not offered is "bain;" but when offered, "ḡlac."

VERB.	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN.
pár	grow	pár
peao	whistle	peaoǵaíl
peap	pour out, shower	peapcáin
peic	see	peicpint
peuc	behold, look	peucáint
riapruis	ask, enquire	riapruisge
roǵluim	learn	roǵluim
foill	suit, fit	foilleamaint
foim	help, succour	foimcín
freapraíl	attend, serve	freapraíl
ruais	saw	ruaǵaíl
ruaǵaím (róǵaím)	announce, proclaim	{ruaǵaím, ruǵna
fulaim	suffer	{róǵna fulang
gáb	take, go	gábáil
gáim	call, shout	gáim
geall	promise	geallamaint
géim	bellow, low	géimneac or géimeao
glaob	call	glaobac
gluaip	journey, go	gluapact
gól	weep	gól
gúib	pray	gúib
iapp	try, ask, entreat	iappaob
impeap	contend, wrestle	impeapǵaíl
imcís	go away	imceact
innip	tell	innpint
iomcáim	carry	iomcáim
iompuis	turn	iompóob
íoc	pay	íoc
ionat	wash	ionlat
ionnruis	approach	ionnruisge
it	eat	ite
leag	knock down	leagan
lean	follow	leanamaint
léig	let, allow	léigean
ling	leap	ling
lomaim	strip, pull off	lomaim, lompaob
luig	lie (down)	luige
maim	live, exist	{maimeactain
maic	forgive	{maicain
meap	think	{maicean meap

VERB	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN.
οἰλ όλ	nourish drink*	οἰλεσμαινε όλ
πεῖ πείροτσις πιννε πιτ ποινν	sell arrange dance run divide	πεῖ πείροτσαε πιννε πιτ ποιννε
παοῖλ ρεαρ ρεινν ρζαρ ρζιουρ ρζυρι ριυβαῖλ ρλάο ρνάμ ρταο ρτιρό	think stand play (an instrument) separate destroy, erase cease walk slay swim stop sit	παοῖλριν ρεαρμ ρειννμ ρζαριμμαινε ρζιουρ ρζυρι ριυβαῖλ ρλάο ρνάμ ρταο ρτιρόε
ταβαρι ταρις ταριμαινς τεαζαρς τειλς τοέρμαρ τός τόριμς τριές τιυς τιυλλ τιυπλινς	give offer draw teach, instruct fling wind lift search for, pursue forsaken, abandon understand earn, deserve alight, descend	ταβαριε ταριςριν ταριμαινς τεαζαρς τειλζεαν τοέρμαρ τόζαῖλ τόζαινε τόριμζεαε τριέζεαν τιυςρινε, τιυςγινε {τιυλλεαμ τιυλλεαμμαιν τιυπλινς

## Appendix VI.

### A LIST OF VERBS BELONGING TO FIRST CONJUGATION.

bac, stop, hinder, meddle.  
 βαῖν, snatch, take.  
 βάιτ, drown.  
 βείκ, bawl.  
 βογ, soften.

βλις, milk.  
 βυρ, break.  
 βρύγ, bruise.  
 буαῖλ, beat.  
 буαῖρό, give success.

---

\* Drunk, meaning intoxicated, is not όλτα, but "αμ μερζε."

caill, lose.  
 caoin, lament.  
 cait, waste, spend, eat or cast.  
 cam, bend, make crooked.  
 can, sing.  
 caoç, blind.  
 cap, twist, turn, wind, wry.  
 ceap, think.  
 ceao, allow, leave, permit.  
 ceit, hide, conceal.  
 cinn, resolve.  
 cíon, comb.  
 claoir, defeat.  
 claoon, bend, crook.  
 coirç, stop, hinder.  
 crait, shake.  
 crioç, hang.  
 creio, believe, trust.  
 criut, tremble, quake.  
 criom, bend stoop.  
 criom air, set about.  
 cum, form, shape.  
 cuir, put, send.  
 cuir air bun, establish.  
 cuir caoi air, mend.

caoon, condemn, blame.  
 ceairb, ascertain, assure.  
 ceairc, look, observe, remark.  
 ceairmao, forget.  
 oing, press, stuff, push.  
 oíol, sell.  
 oóig, burn, consume.  
 ooirt, spill, shed.  
 omuo, shut, move.  
 oual, plait, fold.  
 oún, close

éirt, listen.

fair, watch, guard.  
 fáirç, squeeze, crush.  
 fan, stay, wait, stop.  
 fár, grow.  
 feao, whistle.  
 feall, deceive, cheat.  
 feann, flay, strip.  
 fear, pour out, shower.  
 feuch, behold, look.

fill, return, come back.  
 feuoaim, I can.  
 fluic, wet, moisten, drench.  
 foill, suit, fit.  
 fóir, help, relieve, succour.  
 foçluim, learn.

gáir, shout, call.  
 geall, promise.  
 gearr, cut.  
 géill, obey, submit.  
 glac, take, reserve.  
 glan, cleanse.  
 glaoç, call.  
 gluair, journey, travel, go.  
 goio, steal.  
 goit, weep, lament.  
 goin, wound.  
 gair, sign, mark.  
 guir, pray.

iair, ask, seek, request, be  
 seech.  
 ioc, pay, atone.  
 it, eat

lar, light, kindle, blaze.  
 leas, throw down.  
 lean, follow, pursue.  
 léig, read.  
 léig, grant, suffer, permit.  
 léim, leap.  
 ling, leap, bounce, start.  
 lion, fill, surfeit, cram.  
 loirç, singe, scorch, burn.  
 lúb, bend, crook.  
 luiç, lie.

mair, last, exist, remain.  
 maib, kill, murder.  
 maic, forgive.  
 maoc, wet, steep.  
 meall, deceive, defraud.  
 meap, estimate, think.  
 meac, fade, wither.  
 mill, spoil, destroy.  
 mol, praise.  
 múin, teach, instruct.

neapɣ, tie, join.  
nɪʒ, wash.

oɪl, nurse, cherish.  
oɪɲ, suit, fit.  
óɪ, drink.

pléapɣ, crack.  
póʒ, kiss.  
póɪɪ, pierce, penetrate.  
pɹeab, spring, leap.

ɹeɪc, sell.  
ɹeub, tear, burst.  
ɹuɪ. run, flee.  
ɹoɪnn, divide.  
ɹuadɪʒ, pursue, rout.

ɹáɪt, thrust, stab.  
ɹaoɪɪ, ɹɪɪ, reflect, think.  
ɹaoɪɲ, deliver.  
ɹʒaoɪɪ, loose, let go.  
ɹʒuɪɲ, cease, desist.  
ɹeap, stand.  
ɹéɪo, blow.

ɹeol, teach, drive, sail.  
ɹeɪnn, play (music).  
ɹʒap, separate, divide.  
ɹʒɹuɪob, write.  
ɹʒɹuɪoɹ, sweep, scrape, destroy.  
ɹɪɪ, drop, let fall, sink.  
ɹín, stretch, extend.  
ɹméro, beckon, wink.  
ɹluɪʒ, swallow.  
ɹnám, swim, float.  
ɹtəo, stop.  
ɹtəo ɹe, desist.  
ɹuɪó, sit.

ɹaɪɹʒ, offer.  
ɹaɪt, choke.  
ɹeɪt. flee.  
ɹoʒ, choose, select.  
ɹóʒ, take up, lift.  
ɹɹeab, plough, till.  
ɹɹéɪʒ, forsake, abandon.  
ɹɹoɪo, fight, quarrel.  
ɹuɪʒ, understand.  
ɹuɪɪɪ, earn, deserve.  
ɹuɪt, fall.

## Appendix VII.

### LIST OF SYNCOPATED VERBS.

avɣapɹ, entreat (avenger).  
aɪtɪn, recognize.

bavɣapɹ, threaten.

carɣapɹ, slaughter.  
ceavɣapɹ, bind.  
cɪʒɪɪ, tickle.  
coɪʒɪɪ, spare.  
cooɪɪ, sleep.  
copɹapɹ, defend.  
cuɹmɪɪ, rub.

oɪbɪɲ, banish.

eɪtɪɪ, fly.

ɹóʒapɹ, serve.  
ɹɹeavɣapɹ, answer.  
ɹɹeapɹoɪɪ, attend, serve.  
(ɹ)opɹapɹ, open.  
ɹuavɣapɹ, proclaim.  
ɹulɹapɹ, suffer.  
ɹurɣapɹ, relieve.

ɹnnɹ, tell.  
ɹngɪɪ, graze.  
ɹmɹ, play.  
ɹomɹapɹ, carry.  
ɹoóvɹapɹ, offer.

λαβαίη, speak.  
 λωμαίη, strip, bara.

μύρσαι, awaken.

παταίη, trample.  
 ρεαδαιν, avoid.

τομαίη, consume, eat.  
 τοδαίη, root.  
 ταρμαίνε, draw.  
 τιονόη, gather.  
 τοδαίη, wind.  
 ταιρμίνε, descend.

## Appendix VIII.

### ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN PRESENT-DAY USAGE.

#### Broad Terminations.

##### Imperative.

SING.	PLU.
1. —	{-αμαοίη (-αμουίη). {-αμ.
2. [root]	-αίθ.
3. -αθ.	-αίθίη, -αοαοίη.

##### Present Tense.

1. -αμ.	-αμαοίη, -αμουίη.
2. -αίη.	-αην ρίθ.
3. -αην.	-αίθ.

##### Imperfect.

1. -αην.	-αμαοίη (-αμουίη).
2. -αί.	-αθ ρίθ.
3. -αθ.	-αίθίη (-αοαοίη).

##### Past.

1. -αί.	-αμαίη.
2. -αίη.	-αθαίη.
3. [no ending]	-αοαίη.

##### Future.

1. -αθ.	-αμαοίη (-αμουίη)
2. -αίη.	-αίθ ρίθ.
3. -αίθ.	-αίθ.

##### Conditional.

1. -αίην	-αμαοίη (-αμουίη).
2. -αί.	-αθ ρίθ.
3. -αθ	-αίθίη (-αοαοίη).

#### Slender Terminations.

##### Imperative.

SING.	PLU.
1. —	{-ίμίη (-εαμουίη). {-εαμ.
2. [root]	-ίθ.
3. -εαθ.	-ίθίη.

##### Present Tense.

1. -ίμ.	-ίμίη (-ίμιη).
2. -ίη.	-εαην ρίθ.
3. -εαην.	-ίθ.

##### Imperfect.

1. -ίην.	-ίμίη (-ίμιη).
2. -εαί.	-εαθ ρίθ.
3. -εαθ.	-ίθίη.

##### Past.

1. -εαί.	-εαμαίη.
2. -ίη.	-εαθαίη.
3. [no ending]	-εαοαίη.

##### Future.

1. -εαθ.	-ίμίη (-ίμιη).
2. -ίη.	-ίθ ρίθ.
3. -ίθ.	-ίθ.

##### Conditional.

1. -ίην.	-ίμίη (-ίμιη).
2. -εαί.	-εαθ ρίθ.
3. -εαθ.	-ίθίη.

## Appendix IX.

### EARLY MODERN FORMS OF THE VERBS.

#### IS.

We give only those forms which have not already been given in the body of the Grammar.

**Dependent Present:** - $\mu\alpha\beta$ ; (as in  $\zeta\mu\mu\alpha\beta$ , *that it is*,  $\tau\alpha\mu\alpha\beta$ , *to which or whom it is*;  $\mu\mu\alpha\beta$ , *if it is not*).

**Obsolete Dependent Present:** - $\alpha\acute{o}$ ; (as in  $\zeta\alpha\alpha\alpha\acute{o}$ , *that it is*,  $\tau\alpha\alpha\alpha\acute{o}$ , *to which or whom it is*). This form occurs frequently in early modern writers. A remnant of it is found in the word  $\zeta\iota\alpha\acute{o}$  or  $\zeta\iota\acute{o}$ , *though it is*.

**Past:**  $\rho\alpha$ .

The form  $\rho\alpha$  of the past though frequently found in early modern writers is now obsolete.

**Dependent Past:** - $\mu\ \beta\alpha$  (sometimes written - $\mu\ \beta\alpha$ ), as in  $\zeta\mu\mu\ \beta\alpha$ , *that it was*;  $\tau\alpha\mu\ \beta\alpha$ , *to whom or which it was*;  $\mu\mu\alpha\mu\ \beta\alpha$ , *if it was not*;  $\alpha\mu\ \beta\alpha$ , *was it?*  $\mu\iota\alpha\mu\ \beta\alpha$ , *it was not*.

The full form of the Dependent Past, though sometimes found in early modern writers is now contracted to - $\mu\beta'$  before vowels, and to - $\mu$  before consonants.

**Subjunctive:**  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\mu\alpha\alpha\acute{o}$  ( $\tau\acute{\alpha}\ \mu\beta\alpha\acute{o}$ ), *if it were*;  $\zeta\acute{\epsilon}\mu\alpha\alpha\acute{o}$  ( $\zeta\acute{\epsilon}\ \mu\beta\alpha\acute{o}$ ), *though it were*.

#### $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ .

#### Imperative.

1. —	$\beta\acute{\iota}\mu\acute{\iota}\rho$ , $\beta\acute{\iota}\alpha\mu$ .
2. $\beta\acute{\iota}$ .	$\beta\acute{\iota}\alpha$ , $\beta\acute{\iota}\alpha\alpha\acute{o}$ .
3. $\beta\acute{\iota}\alpha\alpha$	$\beta\acute{\iota}\alpha\acute{\iota}\rho$ .

#### Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.		DEPENDENT.	
1. $\alpha\tau\acute{\alpha}\mu$	$\alpha\tau\acute{\alpha}\mu\alpha\alpha\iota\alpha$ .	$\mu\mu\iota\mu$	$\mu\mu\iota\mu\acute{\iota}\alpha$ .
2. $\alpha\tau\alpha\alpha\iota$	$\alpha\tau\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\alpha\iota$ .	$\mu\mu\iota\epsilon$ (- $\mu$ )	$\mu\mu\iota\tau\acute{\iota}$ .
3. $\alpha\tau\acute{\alpha}$	$\alpha\tau\acute{\alpha}\alpha\iota$ .	$\mu\mu\iota$	$\mu\mu\iota\alpha$ .

#### Habitual Present.

1. $\beta\acute{\iota}\mu$	$\beta\acute{\iota}\mu\acute{\iota}\alpha$ .
2. $\beta\acute{\iota}\mu$	$\beta\acute{\iota}\tau\acute{\iota}$ .
3. $\beta\acute{\iota}(\alpha)$	$\beta\acute{\iota}\alpha$ .

#### Past Tense.

ABSOLUTE.		DEPENDENT.	
1. $\beta\acute{\alpha}\alpha\alpha\mu$	$\beta\acute{\alpha}\mu\alpha\mu$ .	$\mu\alpha\beta\alpha\mu$	$\mu\alpha\beta\alpha\mu\alpha\mu$ .
2. $\beta\acute{\alpha}\alpha\alpha\mu$	$\beta\acute{\alpha}\beta\alpha\mu$ .	$\mu\alpha\beta\alpha\mu$	$\mu\alpha\beta\alpha\beta\alpha\mu$ .
3. $\beta\acute{\alpha}$	$\beta\acute{\alpha}\alpha\mu$	$\mu\alpha\beta\epsilon$	$\mu\alpha\beta\alpha\alpha\mu$ .



**Future Tense.**

- |    |            |                 |
|----|------------|-----------------|
| 1. | bιαο       | bιαμαοιο, bιαm. |
| 2. | bιαιη      | bιατ αιοι.      |
| 3. | bιαιθ, bια | bιαιο.          |

**Relative :** bιαρ.

**Conditional—Secondary Future.**

- |    |            |           |
|----|------------|-----------|
| 1. | béinn      | béimír.   |
| 2. | béiteá     | bιαθ ηιθ. |
| 3. | bιαθ, beit | béioír.   |

**Subjunctive Mood.****Present Tense.**

- |    |        |                  |
|----|--------|------------------|
| 1. | ηαβαο  | ηαβμαοιο, ηαβam. |
| 2. | ηαβαιη | ηαβτ αιοι.       |
| 3. | ηαιθε  | ηαβαιο.          |

## ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN EARLY MODERN IRISH.

The following is a table showing the various endings of the regular verbs in Early Modern Irish. It is not intended that these forms should be learned by the student; they are given merely for *reference* :—

**Broad Terminations.****Imperative.**

- |    |        |             |
|----|--------|-------------|
|    | SING.  | PLU.        |
| 1. | —      | -am.        |
| 2. | [root] | -aiθ.       |
| 3. | -aθ.   | -(a)οαιοιρ. |

**Present Tense.**

- |    |       |            |
|----|-------|------------|
| 1. | -aim. | -(a)μαοιο. |
| 2. | -aiη. | -ταοι.     |
| 3. | -aiθ. | -αιο.      |

**Imperfect**

- |    |        |             |
|----|--------|-------------|
| 1. | -ainn. | -amαιοιρ.   |
| 2. | -τα.   | -ταοι.      |
| 3. | -aθ.   | -(a)οαιοιρ. |

**Past.**

- |    |             |         |
|----|-------------|---------|
| 1. | -αρ.        | -amαιη. |
| 2. | -αιρ.       | -aβαιη. |
| 3. | (no ending) | -aοαιη. |

**Slender Terminations.****Imperative.**

- |    |        |          |
|----|--------|----------|
|    | SING.  | PLU.     |
| 1. | —      | -eam.    |
| 2. | [root] | -iθ.     |
| 3. | -eaθ.  | -(i)οίρ. |

**Present Tense.**

- |    |      |          |
|----|------|----------|
| 1. | -im. | -(i)míο. |
| 2. | -iη. | -τί.     |
| 3. | -iθ. | -ιο.     |

**Imperfect.**

- |    |       |          |
|----|-------|----------|
| 1. | -inn. | -(i)mír. |
| 2. | -τεά. | -τί.     |
| 3. | -eaθ. | -(i)οίρ. |

**Past.**

- |    |              |          |
|----|--------------|----------|
| 1. | -ear.        | -eamαιη. |
| 2. | -ιρ.         | -eaβαιη. |
| 3. | (no ending). | -eaοαιη. |

**Future.**

- |    |                             |   |
|----|-----------------------------|---|
| 1. | - $\rho\alpha\upsilon$ .    | - $\rho\alpha\mu$ ( $\alpha\sigma\iota\upsilon$ ) |
| 2. | - $\rho\alpha\iota\eta$ .   | - $\rho\alpha\sigma\iota$ .                       |
| 3. | - $\rho\alpha\iota\theta$ . | - $\rho\alpha\iota\upsilon$ .                     |

**Future.**

- |    |                                  |  |
|----|----------------------------------|--|
| 1. | - $\rho\epsilon\alpha\upsilon$ . | - $\rho\epsilon\alpha\mu$ ( $\rho\iota\mu\iota\upsilon$ ). |
| 2. | - $\rho\iota\eta$ .              | - $\rho\iota$ .  |
| 3. | - $\rho\iota\theta$ .            | - $\rho\iota\upsilon$ .                                    |

**Conditional.**

- |    |                              |   |
|----|------------------------------|---|
| 1. | - $\rho\alpha\iota\mu\eta$ . | - $\rho\alpha\mu\alpha\sigma\iota\eta$ .      |
| 2. | - $\rho\acute{\alpha}$ .     | - $\rho\alpha\sigma\iota$ .                   |
| 3. | - $\rho\alpha\theta$ .       | - $\rho\alpha\upsilon\alpha\sigma\iota\eta$ . |

**Conditional.**

- |    |                                  |                             |
|----|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. | - $\rho\iota\mu\eta$ .           | - $\rho\iota\mu\iota\eta$ . |
| 2. | - $\rho\epsilon\acute{\alpha}$ . | - $\rho\iota$ .             |
| 3. | - $\rho\epsilon\alpha\theta$ .   | - $\rho\iota\upsilon\eta$ . |

**Irregular Verbs.**

It is principally in the future tense that the inflexions of the irregular verbs in Early Modern Usage differ from the forms now generally used.

**Future Tense.**

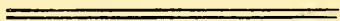
- |    |                   |  |
|----|-------------------|--|
| 1. | (no termination)  | $\alpha\mu$ ( $-\mu\alpha\sigma\iota\upsilon$ ). |
| 2. | $\alpha\iota\eta$ | $\tau\alpha\sigma\iota$ .                        |
| 3. | $\alpha$          | $\alpha\iota\upsilon$ .                          |

The following verbs took no inflexion in the 3rd person singular of the present time. The forms in brackets are the dependent forms:—

$\upsilon\omicron$ - $\theta\epsilon\iota\eta$  ( $\tau\alpha\theta\alpha\iota\eta$ ),  $\upsilon\epsilon\iota\eta$  ( $\alpha\theta\alpha\iota\eta$ ),  $\upsilon\omicron$ - $\xi\epsilon\iota\theta$  ( $\rho\alpha\xi\alpha\iota\theta$ ,  $\rho\alpha\xi\theta\alpha\mu\eta$ ),  $\upsilon\omicron$ - $\xi\eta\iota$ ,  $\upsilon\omicron$ - $\acute{\epsilon}\iota$  ( $\rho\alpha\iota\epsilon$ ), ( $\epsilon\lambda\upsilon\eta\eta$ ),  $\tau\iota\varsigma$ ,  $\tau\acute{\epsilon}\iota\upsilon$ .

The following had no inflexion in the 1st person singular past tense:—

$\alpha\upsilon\theta\upsilon\delta\alpha\mu\epsilon\tau$ , ( $\upsilon\theta\upsilon\delta\alpha\mu\epsilon\tau$ ),  $\alpha\tau\epsilon\omicron\mu\eta\mu\alpha\varsigma$  ( $\rho\alpha\epsilon\alpha$ )  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\alpha\varsigma$ ,  $\epsilon\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha$ ,  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\eta\alpha\varsigma$ .



# INDEX.

The numbers refer to the paragraphs.

- Δ, *voc. part.*, 21*d*.  
 Δ, *poss. adj.*, 522.  
 Δ, *rel.*, 26*e*, 233, &c., 546, 554.  
 Δ, *part.*, 169.  
 Δ, *prep.*, 605(2).  
 Δ*b*, 339.  
 Δ*β*Δ, 119.  
 Δ*β*Δ*ι*η, 35*c*, 355.  
 Δ*β*ηΔ*ι*η*μ*, 357.  
 Δ*β*υ*ρ*, 436.  
 -Δ*ς*, 467*a*.  
 Δ*ς*τ 50, 550.  
 Δ*ο*ειμ*ι*η*μ*, 357.  
 Δ*ο*τυΔ*ι*ο*ς*, 441.  
 Δ*ο*υ*β*Δ*ι*η*μ*τ, 359.  
 Δ*ς*, 191, 217, 617.  
 Δ*ς*Δ, 544.  
 Δ*ς*Δ*ι*ο*ς*, 86, 89.  
 Δ*ς*ο*μ*, 191.  
 Δ*ς*υ*ρ*, 154, 628(2).  
 Δ*ι*ci*ο*, 88.  
 Δ*ι*ς*τ*e, 86.  
 Δ*ι*l*η*, 10, 43*d*.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*e, 166.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*eο*ς*Δ*ο*, 297.  
 Δ*ι*η*γ*eΔ*ι*, 65.  
 Δ*ι*η*μ*, 43(4), 104.  
 Δ*ι*τ, 14, 84, 530 (*note*).  
 Δ*ι*l*η*Δ, 129, 473(2).  
 Δ*ι*l*ι*η*μ*, 35*b*, 144.  
 Δ*ι*η, 104.  
 Δ*ι*η (Δ*ι*η*μ*), *prefix*, 455.  
 Δ*ι*η, Δ*ι*ηΔ*ς*, 433.  
 Δ*ι*ηΔ*ς*, 433.  
 -Δ*ι*ηΔ*ι*l, 467*c*.  
 Δ*ι*ηΔ*ι*η, 172.  
 Δ*ι*ηΔ*ι*ηΔ*ς*, 434.  
 Δ*ι*ηΔ*ι*ηΔ*ς*, 433.  
 Δ*ι*ηl*ι*Δ*ς*, 433.  
 Δ*ι*ηl*ι*ς, 433.  
 Δ*ι*η, *intens part.*, 161.  
 Δ*ι*η, *def. art.*, 39, 40, 470, &c.  
 Δ*ι*η, *interrog. part.*, 26*e*.  
 Δ*ι*ηΔ*ι*l, 438.  
 Δ*ι*ηΔ*ι*η, 104.  
 Δ*ι*η-Δ*ι*η*ρ*e, 198.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*eΔ*ι*η, 441.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*i*υ*, 434.  
 Δ*ι*ηl*ι*Δ*ι*η, 441.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*i*ο*η, 436.  
 Δ*ι*ηη, 39, 604, 627.  
 Δ*ι*ηηΔ*ι*η, 166.  
 Δ*ι*ηο*ς*τ, 434.  
 Δ*ι*ηο*ι*η, 441.  
 Δ*ι*ηοηη, 438.  
 Δ*ι*ηυΔ*ι*η, 436.  
 Δ*ο*i*β*iηηη, 35*b*, 144.  
 Δ*ο*i*β*ηeΔ*ι*η, 131.  
 Δ*ο*iηe, 447.  
 Δ*ο*iη'ne, 64.  
 Δ*ο*iηηeΔ*ς*, 64, 241.  
 Δ*ο*iη*ρ*e, 166.  
 Δ*ο*η, *numer.*, 172, 505, 509.  
 Δ*ο*η, *indef. adj.*, 197, 200.  
 Δ*ο*ηΔ*ς*, 58.  
 Δ*ο*ηΔ*ι*η, 177.  
 Δ*ο*ηηΔ*ι*ο*ς*, 173, 504.  
 Δ*ι*η, *poss. adj.*, 14, 26*a*, 522.  
 Δ*ι*η, *pron.*, 237.  
 Δ*ι*η, *interrog.*, 278.  
 Δ*ι*η, *prep.*, 219, 578, 618.  
 Δ*ι*η, *verb*, 423.  
 Δ*ι*η Δ*ι*τ, 197.  
 Δ*ι*η Δ*ι*ηΔ*ι*ο*ς*, 613*d*.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*e, 166.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*Δ*ι*η, 42*d*.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*i*υ*ς, 297, 315*d*.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*i*η*η, 424.  
 Δ*ι*η*μ*, 69.  
 Δ*ι*η*ρ*, 423.  
 Δ*ι*η, 225, 919.  
 Δ*ι*η, 154.  
 Δ*ι*ηΔ*ι*η, 43(3), 132.  
 Δ*ι*ηΔ*ι*η, 390.

- ба (bó), 132.  
 ба (*verb*), 158, 334, 338, 340, 341.  
 бáтóи, 42c, 100.  
 баиле, 113.  
 байлш, 293.  
 бáн, 165.  
 бáр, 14.  
 бар, 14.  
 беac, 79.  
 беacш, 166.  
 беacшáн, 198, 241.  
 беacлac, 58.  
 беан, 132.  
 беap, 326.  
 беacтa, 131.  
 беиtpeдapи, 326.  
 беиtpi, 327.  
 бéим, 87.  
 беиp, 342, 618(7c).  
 беиpиm, 347, 618(7b).  
 беиpт, 177, 481.  
 беиt, 327, 330.  
 бéиtдapи, 326.  
 бéиtи, 327.  
 беиtтe, 284.  
 beo, 148.  
 биaт, 64.  
 биop, 322.  
 биtдapи, 319, 322, 329.  
 биtдap, 324.  
 биtи, 323.  
 биáиtтe, 86.  
 биáтac, 86.  
 bó, 132.  
 бóтapи, 65.  
 бpиaон, 199.  
 бpиac, 163.  
 бpиáтapи, 132.  
 бpиeáш, 166.  
 бpиaн, 64.  
 бpиeиtдaм, 42b, 131.  
 бpиaнac, 486.  
 бpиacтapи, 86, 131.  
 бpиoт, 649.  
 бpиac, 56, 66.  
 бpиuiтeдapи, 35a, 85.  
 бpишш, 315b.  
 буacбиll, 43(3), 105.  
 буaiт, 43(4).  
 буaiл, 261, &c  
 буaiлтeдapи, 251.  
 буaiлacт, 289.  
 буиtдeдapи, 35a, 85.  
 буиm (bó), 132.  
 буpи, 26a, 522.  
 бá, 26e, 278.  
 ca, 202.  
 cа, 600.  
 caбдapи, 35a.  
 cаc, 241.  
 cаcт, 243.  
 cаcт нa тaоb, 435.  
 cаcт cиpшe, 435.  
 cаcт páт, 435.  
 cаиtтe, 243.  
 cаилín, 43e, 111.  
 cаилл, 316c.  
 cаиллeac, 77.  
 cáиm, 105, 131.  
 cáиpтe, 121.  
 cаиt, 316a.  
 cаn, 600.  
 cаoi, 114.  
 cаoиm, 315b.  
 cаopи, 66.  
 cаopиa, 125.  
 cаpаилл, 37, 69.  
 cápи, 278.  
 cар, 600.  
 cарa, 121.  
 cариpишш, 35a.  
 cаршoиm, 433.  
 caтaиm, 433, 435.  
 caтaиpи, 35a.  
 Caтaдoиpи, 115.  
 caтaдoиpи, 126.  
 cé, 243, 435.  
 ceacтapи, 242.  
 ceacт, 11.  
 céacт, 14, 67, 175, 511.  
 céacт (*first*), 167, 505.  
 ceann, 200b, 513.  
 ceannac, 293.  
 ceannuiш, 293.  
 ceap, 67.  
 ceapиc, 4<sup>pa</sup>, 78.  
 ceapиt, 64, 654.  
 ceacтapи, 171.  
 ceacтpapи, 177, 481.

céite, 246.  
 céim, 87.  
 ceitíre, 508.  
 ceo, 132.  
 ceoča (ceo), 132.  
 ceoṡana (ceo), 132.  
 ceol, 8, 67.  
 ceuto, 167, 505.  
 Ceuroaoín, 447.  
 ceurto, 243.  
 cia, 202, 243, 245.  
 ciac (ceo), 132.  
 cia rheuto, 202.  
 cibé, 237.  
 cím, 389.  
 cinn, 513.  
 cioca, 243, 435.  
 cionnur, 435, 557.  
 cit, 104.  
 ciúmaidir, 88.  
 clann, 86.  
 clár, 68.  
 cleap, 104.  
 cliaimáin, 105.  
 coicctóir, 88.  
 cloinne, 86.  
 clor, 398.  
 cnám (cnáim), 93.  
 cneap, 64, 66.  
 cnoc, 63.  
 coṡait, 35c.  
 coṡlaṡ, 10.  
 coṡaṡ, 67.  
 coisil, 302, &c.  
 coisilte, 313.  
 coileac, 59.  
 coill, 89, 131.  
 coimlíon, 32 (note).  
 coin, 119.  
 cóir, 14, 145, 654.  
 coirṡ, 316b.  
 coirte, 14.  
 com, 154.  
 comnuirṡte, 565.  
 cónna, 131.  
 comuiprain, 119.  
 conao, 435.  
 connac, 392.  
 Connačta, 130.  
 connaic, 392.

connuac, 105.  
 conur, 435.  
 coróin, 131.  
 cor, 76.  
 corain, 315c.  
 cóta, 110.  
 cré, 132.  
 creio, 316c.  
 créiṡeana (cré), 132.  
 creioṡeao, 280.  
 creuto, 243.  
 criac (cré), 132.  
 crior, 98.  
 crioré, 114.  
 críónac, 131.  
 cuac, 131.  
 cuacṡar, 411.  
 cuair, 411.  
 cuata, 398.  
 cuatačar, 398.  
 cuan, 67.  
 curo, 105, 198, 241, 524, &c.  
 cúṡ, 508.  
 cúṡeap, 177, 481.  
 'cuile, 242.  
 cúinne, 113.  
 cuir, 316b.  
 cuirum, 618(8).  
 cúir, 87.  
 cuirte, 124.  
 cum, 223, 620.  
 cun, 603.

Oá, *numeral*, 514, &c.  
 oá (o+á), 544.  
 oá, *conj.*, 26e, 552.  
 -oá, 467d.  
 oabac, 85.  
 oabce, 86.  
 oaille, 43d.  
 oáta, 603.  
 oáta, 603.  
 oaoi, 114.  
 oaoine, 114.  
 oar, 424.  
 oár, 278.  
 oarma, 508.  
 oarb, 542.  
 Oarmaoín, 447.  
 oárméas, 177, 481.

տաժ, 104.  
 Ծէ (Օւծ), 132.  
 տե, 163, 227, 606(1), 621.  
 տեաճար, 145.  
 տեճար, 411.  
 տեճ, 493, 494(2).  
 տեճար, 411.  
 տեան, 316e.  
 տեարծրաճար, 132.  
 տեիրծրար, 132.  
 տեիրծրար, 132.  
 տեար, 387.  
 տեարար, 279, 381.  
 տեիճ, 507.  
 տեի, 87.  
 տեւ, 381.  
 տեւեաճար, 177.  
 տեւիւմ, 357.  
 տեւրեար, 442.  
 տեօճ, 86.  
 տեօր, 66, 200.  
 տեւ, 377.  
 Ծւծ (God), 132.  
 տւծ (day), 448.  
 տւար, 177, 481.  
 տւեար, 314.  
 տւիւր, 315c.  
 տւջե, 86.  
 տւեար, 141.  
 տւեաճ, 139.  
 տւաւ, 114.  
 տօ, *numeral*, 14, 171.  
 տօ, *poss. adj.*, 182, 521.  
 տօ, *prefix*, 287, 455.  
 տօ, *before past tense*, 276.  
 տօ, *prep.* 188, 220, 606(1), 622.  
 տօճար, 427.  
 տօճար, 427.  
 տօճ է, 336.  
 տօւճ, 315b.  
 տօւրն, 199a.  
 տօւ, 415.  
 Ծօննաճ, 447.  
 տօրնան, 199a.  
 տօրար, 65.  
 տօճար, 198.  
 տրաւ, 114.  
 տրօճ, 493, 494(2).  
 տրււմ, 43(4), 101.  
 տրաւար, 419.

տրար, 87.  
 տրար, 359.  
 տրարար, 359.  
 տրւ, 114.  
 տւ, 415.  
 տւ, 415.  
 տւն, 67, 315a.  
 Է, 211, 535.  
 եաճ, 70.  
 եաճար, 70.  
 եաճ, 213.  
 եաճարար, 462.  
 եաճ, 646.  
 եաճարար, 462.  
 եաճ, 649.  
 եան, 61.  
 եանար, 70.  
 եար, 114.  
 եւջար, 65.  
 եւջար(տ), 197.  
 եւ, 197.  
 եւն, 32, *note*.  
 եւն, 64, 241.  
 Էր, 127, 473(2).  
 եօ, 238.  
 եօր, 131.  
 եւտաճ, 58.  
 եւ, 61.

բա, 190, 228, 623.  
 բա, 279, 392.  
 բաճ, 376.  
 բաճար, 370.  
 բաճար, 392.  
 բա, 63.  
 բա, 166.  
 բաճ, 316f.  
 բաճ, 31 f, 368.  
 բաճար, 280.  
 բա, 388.  
 բաճ, 371.  
 բա, 14, 316a.  
 բա, 190, 228, 623.  
 բա, 290, 316a.  
 բաճ, 387.  
 բա, 392.  
 բա, 316f.  
 բաճար, 428.  
 բաճար, 425.

ρεαοαη, 425.  
 ρεαοηαμαη, 425.  
 ρεαη, 62, 69.  
 ρέαη, 14, 62.  
 ρεαηαηαη, 147  
 ρεαηη, 11, 166.  
 ρεηc, 386.  
 ρείc, 66.  
 ρείceaη, 131.  
 ρεicpeaηa, 396.  
 ρείζ, 66.  
 ρέιe, 106.  
 ρέiη, 206.  
 ρειp, 87.  
 ρειpciηc, 396.  
 ρειc, 316e.  
 ρεoi, 99.  
 ριa, 66.  
 ρίce, 175, 511.  
 ρίceaο, 163.  
 ρίoi, 14, 97.  
 ρίoi, 161.  
 ρίiη, 32 (note).  
 ρίu, 433, 642.  
 ριaίceaηaη, 35b.  
 ρocal, 66.  
 ρocclói, 43(4).  
 ρói, 259.  
 ρóiηciη, 259.  
 ρoζup, 16.  
 ρoiζpe, 166.  
 ρór, 14.  
 ρpeuη, 83.  
 ρpυζ, 132.  
 ρpυζce, 132.  
 ρpυc, 372.  
 ρua, 94.  
 ρuaζai, 301.  
 ρuaζua, 313.  
 ρuaim, 87, 90.  
 ρuai, 279.  
 ρuaπcαp, 372.  
 ρuroe, 166.  
 ρuilteaη, 321.  
 ρulái, 644.  
 ρupup, 166.  
 ρupa, 166.

ζa, 132.  
 ζά, 544.

ζαb, 318f, 364.  
 ζαbα, 122.  
 ζαbái, 290.  
 ζαbφαο, 367.  
 ζαc, 201.  
 ζαc aoi, 242.  
 ζαc ηe, 201.  
 ζαc uile, 241.  
 ζaete (ζa), 132.  
 ζaη, 580, 606(2), 624.  
 ζai, 166.  
 ζeaióio, 115.  
 ζé, 132.  
 ζeal, 132.  
 ζéanna, 132.  
 ζeai, 141, 166.  
 ζeibim, 37.  
 ζeit, 43(4).  
 ζeobao, 365.  
 ζeobao, 373.  
 ζeuz, 80.  
 ζibé, 235.  
 ζiōeao, 452.  
 ζile, 106.  
 ζioηua, 166.  
 ζlap, 165.  
 ζlé, 161.  
 ζluai, 87.  
 ζním, 379.  
 ζníoi, 105.  
 ζníoi, 379.  
 ζnó, 10, 114.  
 ζo, *conj.*, 26e, 2<sup>25</sup>, 549  
 ζo, *prep.*, 39, 625.  
 ζo ceaηη, 613d.  
 ζo oé maη, 435.  
 ζoiη, 315b.  
 ζpiánua, ζpiánoe, 10, 166.  
 ζpiainín, 149.  
 ζpeim, 43(4), 102, 200.  
 ζpian, 81.  
 ζuit, 316b.  
 ζup, 278.  
 ζuc, 104.

1, 39, 186, 226, 604, 627  
 í, *pron.*, 211.  
 í, *noun.* ua, 132.  
 iaη, *prep.*, 579.  
 iaη, 440.



ιαρτάρι, 442.  
 ιοιη, 229, 602(1), 628.  
 ιμβάρις, 434.  
 ιμεαριτά, 314.  
 ιη, *pronoun*, 238.  
 ιη, *prep.*, 39, 535, 627.  
 ιη (ιον) *prefix*, 286.  
 ιησέ, 434.  
 ιη-φεισρεαυα, 396.  
 ιησιδιό, 449.  
 ιηηιη, 35c.  
 ιομασ, 198.  
 ιομαρις, 198.  
 ιομσδ, 166, 493.  
 ιομτύρι, 603.  
 ιονά, 156.  
 ιον-μολτα, 285.  
 ιονμυιη, 166.  
 ιοννυρ, 452.  
 ιορσδ, 417.  
 ιρ, *conj.*, 170.  
 ιρ, *verb*, 156, 333, 584.  
 ιριολ, 141.  
 ιρτεσδ, 433, 436.  
 ιρτιζ, 433, 436.  
 ιτε, 416.  
 ιύσ, *pronoun*, 238.

λά, 132.  
 λαβδαιη, 35c, 315c.  
 λαδα, 123.  
 λαετε (λά), 132.  
 λαετεαντα (λά) 132.  
 λαίζιη, 130.  
 λαιρτιζ, 438.  
 λαιρτεαρ, 441.  
 λαιρτιαρι, 441.  
 λαιτσε, 86.  
 λάν, 198.  
 λαοσραδ, 70.  
 λαριαιη, 35a.  
 λαρταλλ, 438.  
 λαρτοιη, 441.  
 λαρτυαδ, 441.  
 λατδ, 86.  
 λε, 39, 151, 187, 221, 613d, 629.  
 λεσδσδ, 105.  
 λεσδδαιη, 18, 69.  
 λεσδ, 88.  
 λεσζ, 316d.

λεαν. 316c.  
 λεανδ, 9, 64.  
 λεανσμνα, 290.  
 λεσρα, 105.  
 λεσρ, 421.  
 λεσρμυιζ, 438.  
 λέιζ, 316d.  
 λέιζ, 315a.  
 λέιμ, 87.  
 λέιηη, 113.  
 λεη, 278.  
 λεηδ, 542.  
 λια, 166.  
 λιη, 75.  
 λίον, 67.  
 λιτιη, 88.  
 λό (λά), 132.  
 λοδ, 15.  
 λογζ, 10, 82.  
 λυαν, 447.  
 λυδ, 87.  
 λυδτ, 115.  
 λυζδ, 160, 166.  
 λυδδ, 87.

μά, 21g.  
 μαδ, 64, 69, 487, etc.  
 μασραδ, 70.  
 μασραδ, 65.  
 μαριον, 35a.  
 μαριον, 104.  
 μάριλιν, 32 (note).  
 μάριη, 447.  
 μαριεσδ, 452.  
 μαριτ, 143, 166.  
 μαριτεαρ, 42d.  
 μάλα, 14, 110.  
 μαλλιαδτ, 94.  
 μαορι, 55.  
 μαρι, 21g, 453, 557.  
 -μαρι, 467b.  
 μαρις, 57.  
 μαριςμυιζαδτ, 565.  
 μαριζαδ, 9, 65.  
 μάτδαιη, 132.  
 μεααν, 66.  
 μέδαιη, 14.  
 μεσρα, 166.  
 μι, 132.  
 μιη, 113, 175, 176, 511.

mίλιρ, 144.  
 mίλλ, 315a.  
 mίνιc, 166.  
 mίνις, 315e.  
 mίονca, 166.  
 mίonna (mί), 132.  
 mίopa (mί), 132.  
 mίpoe, 163.  
 mίpe, 205.  
 mίnά, 132.  
 mo, 179, 521.  
 mό, 166.  
 mόioe, 163.  
 mόin, 103, 131.  
 mot, 315a.  
 motaō, 289.  
 motca, 284.  
 mόr, 137, 166.  
 mόpán, 198.  
 mόm-ίειpeca, 177.  
 muōa, 433.  
 muio, 270.  
 mύιtte, 113.  
 muiuir, 115.  
 mullač, 58.  
 muna, 26e, 550.  
 munaρ, 278.  
 mύμ, 67.  
  
 na, 14, 40f.  
 ná, 14, 156.  
 ná 50, 452.  
 nač, *conj.*, 26e.  
 nač, *rel. pron.*, 235.  
 načca, 278(6).  
 náma, 119.  
 naoi, 507.  
 naonōca, 177.  
 náρ, 278(6), 519.  
 -ne, 184.  
 neač, 64.  
 neam-, *prefix*, 455.  
 neapc, 64, 198, 650.  
 neapa, 166.  
 neim-, 455.  
 neim-ζεanaimlačc, 462.  
 neul, 67.  
 ní, 21g.  
 ní, *noun.*, 487, &c.  
 nic, 487. &c.

nίō, 114, 157, 158  
 nίoi, 278.  
 nίop, 157, 158.  
 noč, 234.  
 nó 50, 550.  
 nuao, 494(2).  
 nuaiρ, 557.  
  
 O, *pronoun*, 233.  
 ó, *noun*, 132, 487, &c.  
 ó, *prep.*, 189, 222.  
 obaiρ, 35a, 88.  
 očc, 507.  
 ó ōcaρ, 441.  
 oiōce, 434.  
 oileán, 62.  
 oipeao, 198.  
 oipceca, 442.  
 ól, 316a.  
 olann, 35a.  
 olc, 166.  
 ópáio, 83.  
 ómōa, 148.  
 ómcač, 58.  
 óp, 632.  
 op5aiρ, 298 (note),  
 ó čuao, 441.  
  
 páoρia5, 115.  
 paioiρ, 88.  
 páipc, 87.  
 paopač, 486.  
 pé i 69.  
 peann, 66.  
 peapca, 120.  
 pi5inn, 35a.  
 pin5inn, 35a, 199.  
  
 Raōčca, 329.  
 paōčca, 325.  
 pa5ao, 412.  
 pána5, 420.  
 pán5caρ, 420.  
 paib, 279, 325.  
 páiōce, 363.  
 peamca, 141.  
 píem, 87.  
 peub, 259.  
 pí, 32.  
 piaccaia, 421.

- րաճժանար, 421.  
 րան, 64.  
 րաջիմ, 420.  
 րաջե, 132.  
 րառնե, 381.  
 րիօժ, 161.  
 րիօժա, 132.  
 րիւթ, 290, 316a.  
 րիօ, 279.  
 րիօ, 161.  
 րիօժայն, 421.  
 րիօն, 224, 633.  
 րիօնիր, 224.  
 րիօնու. 199.  
 րիւժ, 279.  
 Տա(c)րան, 130, 473(2).  
 րարծիւ, 5b.  
 րարժ, 98.  
 րան, 238.  
 րաւ, 438.  
 րան, 238.  
 րար, 161.  
 Տաժար, 447.  
 րար, 114.  
 րէ, *pronoun*, 210.  
 րէ, *numeral*, 508.  
 -րէ, 184.  
 րաճժ, 507.  
 րաճժար, 177, 481.  
 րառնիօժ, 152.  
 -րան, 184.  
 րան, 494(2).  
 րէան, 14.  
 րար, 316e.  
 րարան, 205.  
 րարար, 177, 481.  
 րար, 195, 238.  
 րար, 66.  
 րար, 67.  
 րարաւ, 315b.  
 րար, 316c.  
 րարաւ, 66, 67.  
 րարան, 86.  
 րարաւ, 42c.  
 րար, 86.  
 րարաւ, 131.  
 րար, 86.  
 րար, 87.  
 րարիօրբաւ, 280.  
 րար, 316b.  
 րի, 210.  
 րա, 166.  
 րար, 441.  
 րար, 239.  
 րն, *adj.*, 14, 195.  
 րն, *pronoun*, 238.  
 րն, 14.  
 րնէ, րնի, 239.  
 րիօր, 436.  
 րարաւ, 35c, 290.  
 րար, 238.  
 րար, 132.  
 րարաւ, 65.  
 րան, 66.  
 րար, 88.  
 րար, 132.  
 րար, 131.  
 րար, 113.  
 րար, 65.  
 րարան, 315b.  
 րար, 66.  
 րար, 316a.  
 րար, *adj.*, 195.  
 րար, *pron.*, 238.  
 րար, *prefix*, 236, 455.  
 րար, 145.  
 րար, 195.  
 րար, 441.  
 րար, 89.  
 րար, 87.  
 րար, 64.  
 րարիւ, 420.  
 րարիւ, 420.  
 րար, 131.  
 րար, 104.  
 րար, 436.  
 րար, 238.  
 րար, 49(1), 90.  
 րար, 14, 551, 553.  
 րար, 14, 49(1), 90.  
 րար, 346.  
 րար, 400.  
 րար, 318.  
 րար, 103.  
 րար, 279, 392.  
 րար, 131.  
 րար, 433.  
 րար, 402.

ἐάνδεα, 403.  
 ταν, *verb*, 399.  
 ταν, *prep.*, 230, 634.  
 ἐάηλα, 426.  
 τάτταν, 320.  
 τε, 148, 166.  
 τέ, 237.  
 τεαδ, 132.  
 τεαδτ, 406.  
 τεαδταν, 400.  
 τεατταν, 128.  
 τεαρ, 440, 441.  
 τέις, 408.  
 τειλς, 316d.  
 तेने, 113, 131.  
 τέιις, 409.  
 तेο, 148, 166.  
 त्ता, 440, 441.  
 तिवेदत, 406.  
 तिस, 132.  
 तिξेदता, 112.  
 तिम, 390.  
 तिमदेतल, 603.  
 तिमनेार, 649.  
 तीोटदेत, 406.  
 ती, 89.  
 तिम, 166.  
 तीοττα, 166.  
 तीο, 436.  
 तुवδα, 351.  
 तობार, 68.  
 तोल, 92.  
 तो, 440, 441.  
 तो, 603.  
 तरा, 603.

ती, 39, 231, 604, 635.  
 तेαρ, 505.  
 तेαρता, 603.  
 ते, 166.  
 ते, 316d.  
 ते, 166.  
 ती, 177, 481.  
 ती, 76 (note).  
 ती, 162 462.  
 ती, 88.  
 ती, 531.  
 ती, 440, 441.  
 ती, 442.  
 ती, 436.  
 ती, 279.  
 ती, 89.  
 ती, 166.  
 ती, 198.  
 ती, 205.

ता, 132.  
 ता, 87.  
 ता, 58.  
 ता, 35b, 14L.  
 ता, 88.  
 ता, 66.  
 ता, 196.  
 ता, 132, 489.  
 ता, 197, 201.  
 ता, 114.  
 ता, 130.  
 ता, 232, 636.  
 ता, 161.  
 ता, 166.  
 ता, 166.

Am n-a cup i scló  
o' ua Cačail agur o'á burcean  
35 36 agur 37 Spáio móri an tpiáza,  
baile-ata-cliač.







gkw  
pre out

f125

